

I

AM

GOD

Written by:
The Writer

I

AM

GOD

I AM GOD

I AM GOD

Copyright © 2004 by The Writer. All Rights Reserved.

Library of Congress Control Number:

International Standard Book Number: 0-9744664-2-5

Please, no portion of this book may be reproduced in any form without permission.

Thank you.

PRODUCTION ACKNOWLEDGMENTS:

The Lord God

PUBLISHED BY: The Writer

PRINTED BY: The Writer

TITLE: I AM GOD

“I AM GOD.”

Exodus 3:13-14

¹³Then Moses said to God, “Indeed, when I come to the children of Israel and say to them, ‘The God of your fathers has sent me to you,’ and they say to me, ‘What is His name?’ what shall I say to them?”

¹⁴And God said to Moses, “I AM WHO I AM.” And He said, “Thus you shall say to the children of Israel, ‘I AM has sent me to you.’”

TITLE: I AM GOD
TABLE OF CONTENTS

Title Page

Table of Contents

Dedication – Page 1

Introduction – Page 3

Opening Statement – Page 5

The Writer – Page 7

I AM GOD—Autobiography – Page 16

Numbers – Page 23

5 Attributes of God

5 Facts about God

7 Secrets to Scripture

7 Things Jesus said in one Sentence

9-11-01

10 Tenets

12-Steps of Christian Discipleship

15-Points in War

Lists – Page 70

Jesus Christ's Top 10 List

School List: Top 10 Cool Things to Know or Do

A-Z: A

Accept Jesus

Addiction

Adversity

Angels

Anger

Animals

Antichrist

Anti-Christians

A-Z: B

Baptism

Beliefs

Born Again

A-Z: C

Church

Commandments

Communication

Confession

Creation

A-Z: D

Death

Demons

Devil

Disciples

A-Z: E

Earth

End Times

Energy

Entertainment

Eternal Life

Eternal Security

Evil

A-Z: F

Forgiveness

Free-will and Freedom

A-Z: G

Giving

God

Good News and Bad News

Government

Grace versus Works

A-Z: H

Healing

Health

Heaven

Holy Spirit

Homelessness

Human Body

Human Relations

A-Z: I

In Touch

A-Z: J

Joyful

Judgment

Justice

A-Z: K

Killing

Knowledge

A-Z: L

Law

Life

Life Experiences

Love

A-Z: M

Marriage

Martyrdom

Men

Mind

Money, Money, Money

A-Z: N

Nations

The New Testament-The Final Promise

A-Z: O

Obedience

The Old Testament-The First Promise

A-Z: P

Pastors, Priests, and Pharisees

Patience

Peace

People

Perfect Plan

Performance

Politics

Prayer

Preaching

Prophecy

Punishment

A-Z: Q

Questions and Answers

A-Z: R

The Rapture

Religions

Revival

Rome

A-Z: S

Salvation

Science

Self-Destruction

Self-Extinction

Service

Sex

Sin

Spirit Possession

Stories

Style

Suicide

A-Z: T

Temptation

Truth

A-Z: U

UFO's

Universe

A-Z: V

Versus [Vs.]

A-Z: W

War

Who Said It

Women

Words

Work

World View

A-Z: X

X=Symbol for Christ

A-Z: Y

You—WWYD—What Would You Do?

A-Z: Z

Zechariah

Cases – Page 505

Chapters and Verses – Page 508

Letters – Page 538

A Letter from God

Declaration of Independent Protection

Dear People of Islam, Judaism, Christianity, and all the world

President Bush

Benny Hinn

Academy Award[®] Non-Acceptance

Test – Page 547

The Last Chapter – Page 555

TITLE: I AM GOD
DEDICATION



**“I AM GOD...
THIS CROSS
SYMBOLIZES JESUS CHRIST DIED HERE FOR YOU.”**

TITLE: I AM GOD
INTRODUCTION

†

**“I AM GOD...
MARK HIS WORDS...”**

Mark my words...

“I am not God.” God is God. I am The Writer.

I am not The Son of God. The Son of God is Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ is God. I am not Jesus Christ. I am The Writer, and I am a son of God—“I am not God.”

*God is the Holy Spirit. I am The Writer. I am a spiritual man. I am not the Holy Spirit—
“I am not God.”*

TITLE: I AM GOD

OPENING STATEMENT—So Who Am I?

†

...I BELIEVE THERE ARE MANY TRUTHFUL AND KNOWLEDGEABLE PREACHERS AND TEACHERS, MINISTERS AND MINISTRIES ON EARTH TODAY; HOWEVER, LIKE ALL HUMAN BEINGS, NONE IS PERFECT—NONE KNOWS THE ABSOLUTE PERFECT TRUTH OF WHO I AM, AND NO ONE ON EARTH EVER WILL. NEVERTHELESS, WITH SO MANY DISAGREEMENTS AS TO MY NATURE, THERE IS AN IMMEASURABLE AMOUNT OF DECEIT AND UNTRUTHFULNESS BEING TAUGHT AND TALKED ABOUT ME. KEEP IN MIND, TRUTH IS BASED SOLELY ON WHO I AM AND WHAT I DO. THEREFORE, I BELIEVE IT IS THE APPOINTED TIME, THROUGH THIS ANOINTED MAN, THAT I INSTRUCT AND INFORM YOU ON THE TRUTH AND GREATER YOUR KNOWLEDGE OF WHO I AM.

WHEREBY THE WRITER OF *'I AM GOD'* UNDERSTANDS MY NATURE, KNOWS THE TRUTH, AND HAS THE KNOWLEDGE OF WHO I AM; HIS IMPERFECTNESS COMES NOT FROM THE WORDS HE IS TO WRITE FOR ME, BUT FROM HIS DISOBEDIENCE AND SINFUL PAST AND HIS IMPERFECTIONS AS A HUMAN BEING IN THE WORLD. THE HOLY SPIRIT-INSPIRED AND SPIRIT-FILLED WORDS OF GOD, AND MY THOUGHTS, ARE OF ANOTHER WORLD—MY WORLD—THE SPIRIT WORLD.

TITLE: I AM GOD

THE WRITER—*The Writer I Know*

†

**“I AM GOD...
I KNOW THE WRITER.”**

Mark my words...

I'm a compulsive addict.

My addictions, I believe, are only a symptom of self-destruction. After I do something evil, I often feel intense pain; physical, mental, and emotional. I entertain many thoughts, serious thoughts, about suicide.

After my sin, I hate myself so much; I wish I were indeed dead. I feel I have absolutely no one to talk to, but for Jesus [at times], that would understand all [both good and evil] that I'm experiencing. I feel like the loneliest person on the face of the earth. I have no idea how to stop. My body is wasting away physically.

THE TRANSITION

The loneliness is only magnified by the facts of what I believe I know, and who I am, even in a good sense. For example:

THE GOOD

I have written a book and movie that should win the Academy Award[®] and will save countless lives. It is God's direct words and story on the meaning and value of life. He allowed me the blessing to work with Him while He created it.

*I saw the fireball; I believe the foreshadowing of the bombing in New York City on 9-11-01 in my dreams 2 weeks earlier. In addition, the event of 9-11-01 was prophetic in relation to the story and revelations dramatized in *The Writer's* film.*

God has given me the idea for what will be one of, if not, the largest ministry in the world. He has put me in direct line with the personal place of John the Baptist.

I believe God has revealed to me the Antichrist—and if I am wrong—He will reveal to me the Antichrist. And I believe He has shown me how the end of the world will come to be. As well as perhaps the creation of the “new earth,” spoken and written of in the Bible.

THE END

I have felt the presence of Satan and the Holy Spirit on so many gigantic levels and occasions—more importantly, from minute-to-minute and even second-to-second. One minute I am lost—one minute I am saved. These ups and downs, over 40+ years, have weighed me down greatly and I believe the end of my life draws very near.

The combination of the good and evil, and my knowing both, but not being able to fully express both—in conjunction with searching for persons to share these thoughts and works with, has left me both completely isolated and/or completely dependent on Jesus alone.

On a personal note...

A list, abbreviated, of all to whom I wish to speak includes [all of whom would not understand or even help, are]: Dr. Charles Stanley, Fr. Ralph DiOrio, Rev. Billy Graham, the Pope, Benny Hinn, Paul Crouch, Matt Crouch, Steven Spielberg, the President, my father, and my Aunt Helen.

My last words...

Still-in-all, there is no one on earth who could understand all I know.

TITLE: I AM GOD

THE WRITER—The Writer's Story

†

“I AM GOD...

THIS IS THE WRITER'S STORY...

FOR THE LIFE OF HIM, THE WRITER COULDN'T REMEMBER WHERE HE WAS IN 1972 WHEN THE THOUGHT CAME TO HIM LIKE A VOICE IN HIS HEAD:

**‘YOU ARE GOING TO WRITE
A STORY ABOUT THE BIBLE.’**

IN 1991, ALMOST 20 YEARS LATER, AFTER A LONG BOUT WITH SIN AND SUICIDE, HE APPEALED TO ME FOR A MIRACULOUS HEALING...AND I SAVED HIM...I SAVED HIS LIFE.

FIVE YEARS PASSED BY, AND THE ONLY MEANINGFUL WRITING HE HAD DONE WAS A FEW NEWSPAPER ARTICLES, SOME WORLDLY POETRY, AND A DILIGENT ATTEMPT AT A DAILY JOURNAL. THAT WAS UNTIL HE CHOSE TO FULFILL HIS PERSONAL ASPIRATION AND WRITE HIS LIFE STORY IN A SCREENPLAY.

AS HE WORKED TIRELESSLY REMEMBERING, RESEARCHING AND WRITING FOR MORE THAN A YEAR, HE OWNED NEXT-TO-NOTHING; YET HE FELT HIS LIFE WAS BECOMING PRICELESS. ONE DAY, HE PRAYED TO ME, IN FAITH, ASKING FOR FOOD, PROVISIONS AND A FUTURE. HE THINKS HE HEARD ME TELL HIM HE COULD WIN ON A TELEVISION GAME SHOW. THEN I SPOKE TO HIM IN A VOICE AS CLEAR AS HIS OWN THOUGHT:

‘GO TO CALIFORNIA.’

THE WRITER REMARKED TO ME, “PROMISE?”

AFTER MUCH ANGELIC BATTLING BETWEEN MY ANGELS AND SATAN OVER HIS DECISION TO MOVE, HE LEFT UPSTATE NEW YORK UNDER MY PROTECTION.

IN LOS ANGELES, THE CITY OF ANGELS, THE SHOW AUDITIONS MAYBE ONCE EVERY YEAR OR TWO. IN ADDITION, 25,000 PEOPLE YEARLY ATTEMPT TO APPEAR. AS WELL, THE AVERAGE WAITING PERIOD TO GO ON IS THREE TO FOUR YEARS. AS IT WAS, HE AUDITIONED AND APPEARED WITHIN SIX MONTHS. AFTER PROCLAIMING TO HOST AND AUDIENCE ALIKE THAT: “I’M LEAVING IT UP TO INTERVENTION...” HE AMAZINGLY WON OVER \$50,000. NEVERTHELESS, FOR HIM, IT WASN’T THE MONEY: IT WAS THE FACT THAT I ACTUALLY HEARD HIS PRAYER—SENT A MESSAGE VIA AN ANGEL—AND KEPT MY PROMISE.

HE KNEW MILLIONS OF PEOPLE WOULD SEE THE AIRING, BUT HE WONDERED IF THEY WOULD UNDERSTAND MY, HIS LORD’S, WORK ON A TELEVISION GAME SHOW. FROM A SINFUL AND PRIDEFUL VIEW, HE WOULD HAVE LOVED TO WATCH THE PRE-RECORDED SHOW AS IT AIRED THAT DAY AND TAKE CREDIT FOR THIS GREAT ACHIEVEMENT IN HIS LIFE, BUT HE KNEW BETTER. WISELY, HE GAVE HIS WILL TO ME, THE FATHER, AND CHOSE TO RETREAT ALONE WITH HIS MASTER, AT THE BEACH, TO WORSHIP AND GIVE THANKS...HE HAD NO EARTHLY IDEA WHAT I WAS ABOUT TO DO.

HE WAS PRAYING WITH GREAT INTENSITY AND INTIMACY FOR AN HOUR OR SO, WHEN HE FELT WHAT COULD ONLY BE DESCRIBED AS MY GLORY UPON HIM; HIS ARMS AND LEGS SEEMED TO WHITHER AND DANGLE LOOSELY AS HIS BODY SLUMPED OVER IN SUBMISSION. HIS OWN HUMANITY WAS DRAINED OUT OF HIM. HE JUST WALLOVED IN THE FEELING AND THE PRESENCE HE SENSED AND LET HIMSELF COMPLETELY GO. SUDDENLY, HE FOUND HIMSELF STANDING CHEST DEEP IN THE RISING TIDE, DRAWN TOWARD A WHITE LIGHT THAT SHONE WITH A POWER GREATER THAN THE SUN THAT APPEARED TO FORESHADOW IT. IT LOOKED, FELT, AND HE REMEMBERS IT LIKE A TUNNEL OR BEAM THAT DIRECTLY CONNECTED HIM WITH ME, THE HEAVENLY FATHER. IN HIS HEART, I, THE LORD GOD COMMUNICATED TO HIM THAT HE WAS ABOUT TO RECEIVE HIS REWARD FOR FOLLOWING ME THUS FAR. THE MOST MEMORABLE WORDS HE HEARD ME SAY WERE:

‘I AM DELIGHTED IN YOU.’

NEAR SUNSET, I, THE CREATOR, HAD ALLOWED HIM TO FEEL AS ADAM ONCE DID: LIKE THAT OF THE SIN-FREE FIRST MAN. HE FELT NEWNESS, PURITY, AND ONENESS. HE WAS ABSOLUTELY WITHOUT HUMAN WEAKNESS AND EMOTIONS SUCH AS ANGER, JEALOUSY, AND WORRY. HE FELT HE WAS TOTALLY DEVOID OF ANY OF THE MORAL IMPERFECTIONS OF MAN’S FALLEN NATURE. MOREOVER, HE BELIEVES THAT HE WAS IN THE SAME PLACE ADAM WAS AT THE BEGINNING OF TIME. TO THIS DAY, HE STILL BELIEVES HE SAW THE EARTH, SKY, WATER, FISH AND BIRD SIMILAR TO THOSE AT THE DAWN OF CREATION. HE WAS SPEAKING FROM HIS MOUTH, HEAD AND HEART AS HE INTERACTED WITH ME.

THEN A STRANGE FEELING OVERCAME HIM. IT WAS AS IF HE WAS COMING BACK TO EARTH. HE FELT AN EMOTION. THE FIRST FEELING HE HAD WAS THAT OF GREAT LONELINESS. NOT ONLY WAS HE APART FROM ME IN SOME WAY, BUT HE ACTUALLY FELT HE NEEDED OTHER PEOPLE, AS IF HE BELONGED TO MANKIND. IMMEDIATELY, HE HEARD THE DROWNED-OUT CALL OF THE LIFEGUARDS, AUTHORITIES AND BYSTANDERS WHO ATTEMPTED TO COERCE HIM FROM THE SEA BY TELLING HIM, “THE BEACH IS CLOSED!” AND “SUICIDE IS NO WAY TO DIE!” DISBELIEF AND SADNESS WERE HIS NEXT WAVE OF EMOTIONS.

HE ASKED HIMSELF, “WHO DO THEY THINK THE BEACH AND MANKIND BELONG TO?” AGAINST, WHAT HE WOULD SAY WAS HIS “BETTER NATURE”; HE WALKED TO THE SHORE AND BACK INTO THAT WORLD.

HE WALKED AWAY FROM THE SUPERNATURAL EXPERIENCE THAT DAY NEVER TO BE THE SAME. IN RETROSPECT, HE KNOWS HE WAS ONE WITH ME. SO TOO, WAS HE IN THE SAME EARTHEN CLAY AS ADAM. BUT, BEST OF ALL, HE WAS BAPTIZED A NEW CREATION IN MY SON, CHRIST JESUS. THIS STORY *WAS* AND *IS* THE GREATEST DAY OF HIS LIFE. BUT THE STORY DOES NOT END THERE...

IN SERVICE TO ME, HIS CREATOR, WITHIN THE HOUR, HE RETREATED TO THE NEARBY MOUNTAINS WITH LITTLE MORE THAN WRITING INSTRUMENTS, PAPER, AND THE SCRIPTURES. HE WAS ON A MISSION TO WRITE A STORY THAT HAD COME TO HIM IN A DREAM A SHORT TIME EARLIER.

AT THAT SECLUDED PLACE IN A MIRACULOUS STATE, HE WROTE IN CREATIVE UNION WITH ME. DOING HIS INSIGNIFICANT BEST TO EXPERIENCE FORTY DAYS IN THE LIFE OF MY SON, JESUS; HE PRAYED AND FASTED. HE SPOKE TO NO EARTHLY SOUL. HE COMMUNED ONLY WITH SPIRITS, ANGELS AND NATURE. IN SIGHTS AND VISIONS THAT WERE ALMOST BEYOND BELIEF, HE WAS GREATLY TEMPTED AND SAW THE DEVIL. IN VARIOUS SIGNS AND DREAMS, HE WAS VISITED BY HIS GUARDIAN ANGEL AND SPOKEN TO BY ME, JESUS. THESE WERE THE GREATEST FORTY DAYS OF HIS LIFE.

AFTER THIS RETREAT, HE RETURNED TO NEW YORK TO COMPLETE THE WRITING OF HIS DREAM. IT WAS INITIALLY FORTY WEEKS IN THE MAKING, AND FOLLOWING ANOTHER GAME SHOW VICTORY, HE FOUND HIMSELF BACK IN THE LAND OF GOLD TRYING TO GET HIS SCRIPT INTO THE “RIGHT HANDS.” IT WAS THE YEAR 2000, AND ONLY WHEN HE TYPED: “THE END”; DID I REMIND HIM OF SOMETHING ON MY TIMETABLE:

**‘YOU ARE GOING TO WRITE
A STORY ABOUT THE BIBLE.’**

AND SO YOU HAVE IT: THAT DIVINE SCRIPT AND ITS ACCOMPANYING NOVEL ARE WRITTEN. THE BOOK IS NOT ONLY ABOUT THE MEANING OF LIFE AND THE MESSAGES OF THE ANGELS; IT IS BASED ON THE BIBLE AND IS THE STORY OF MY SON, JESUS. BUT THE STORY DOES NOT END THERE...

A YEAR OR SO HAD GONE BY; HE WAS ALONE IN THE KITCHEN OF THE OLD-FASHIONED FARMHOUSE THAT HIS DECEASED MOTHER, MY CREATION, HAD GROWN UP IN. AT THE TABLE, HE WAS WRITING SOME INSPIRATIONAL MESSAGES HE WAS RECEIVING FROM ME; SOMETHING HE HAD BEEN DOING FOR YEARS. USUALLY, HE WOULD WRITE THEM ON SCRAPS OF PAPER, NOTEBOOKS, EVEN BOXES AND CARTONS, WHATEVER WAS HANDY; HE DID NOT WANT TO LOSE THE THOUGHT THAT I WAS GIVING HIM. NOW, HE HAS TYPED ONTO PAGES; YEARS AND YEARS OF JUST A HANDFUL OF THE WRITINGS HE HAS READ AND HEARD FROM ME, MY SON, MY HOLY SPIRIT, AND MY ANGELS...AND SOME FROM SATAN THAT HE DOES NOT YET RECOGNIZE. STILL, TO THIS DAY, APART FROM THE BIBLE, IN YOUR LIFETIME, YOU WILL FIND NO GREATER TRUTH WRITTEN ABOUT ME AND ABOUT WHO I AM...

...I AM GOD.”

TITLE: I AM GOD

THE WRITER—Why Me?

†

**“I AM GOD...
I ONLY KNOW.”**

Mark my words...

Why me? I asked, when it came to my writing “I AM GOD.”

In other words...

The answers I received were these:

- *God created my life for this purpose.*
- *God saved my life for this purpose.*
- *God needed someone.*
- *I was chosen.*
- *I asked God.*
- *I listen to God.*
- *God only knows.*

TITLE: I AM GOD

I AM GOD... *Autobiography—In the Beginning — (John 1:1)*



**“I AM GOD...
MANKIND WAS THE LIFE THAT
JESUS CHRIST GAVE LIFE TO.”**

John 1:1

The Eternal Word

¹In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ²He was in the beginning with God. ³All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made. ⁴In Him was life, and the life was the light of men. ⁵And the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not comprehend it.

¹In the beginning was the Word...*God spoke Creation into existence, and for the first time in the History of Creation; these are the first words of God.*

²He was in the beginning with God....*The first man was in the mind of God from the beginning existence of God. So too, was God in the person of Jesus Christ.*

³All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made....*All things were made through Jesus. If God the Creator made all things—and Jesus Christ is God—then Jesus Christ, the Creator, made all things.*

⁴In Him was life, and the life was the light of men....*Jesus created life. He created life as a state-of-being or a way of existing. And the life He created that was “in His image” was mankind. Mankind was the life that Jesus Christ gave life to.*

⁵And the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not comprehend it....*Jesus Christ’s holiness and life is the light for which the darkness of sin and death is the opposite of and in opposition thereof.*

TITLE: I AM GOD

I AM GOD... Autobiography—In the Middle — (John 3:16-17)



**“I AM GOD...
I SO LOVED THE WORLD
THAT I GAVE MY ONLY BEGOTTEN SON...”**

John 3:16-17

¹⁶For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.

¹⁷For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved.

Mark my words...

For God—*God is the Creator. He created life.*

...so loved—*The Bible says God is love. And since God created life, God loves life.*

...the world—*The world includes every rock, plant and animal; in fact, all of creation. It also means every human being; good or evil, and those who believe in God and those who do not believe in God.*

...that He gave—*God gave mankind life. He gave mankind a physical presence in addition to man's spiritual being. He gave mankind a place to exist beyond the Spirit World and Heaven. Furthermore, when God gave Adam dominion over the plants and animals, and every living thing; God gave Adam the power over the life and death of creation.*

And at The Creation, what could Adam give God in return? The first man, [and in a way, God's first son], Adam, basically did not give God anything in return at the Creation, except to give God someone to love. And so being, all this first created human being could give God, His Creator and Father, was his own life. The truth of the matter is: the most meaningful and memorable thing Adam gave God was sin and death. Adam sinned against God and brought death upon him and all of God's creation. Therefore, God now had to re-create creation and

make man sin-free so in the end, man could be of the same spirit as God the creator. God is a giver, and He is also a forgiver.

...His only begotten Son—*God had a son in Adam, and now God gave His Son, Jesus Christ to live as Adam first did holy and perfect. And Jesus, as the Son, was able to withstand the satanic forces Adam disobediently fell into when tempted. Jesus would obey God and not fall into temptation and sin. Also, Jesus is God. Truth be told, because only God could defeat Satan, God had to become a man to save man. If God was to re-create another son like Adam, that man would have been powerless over the devil and death would still rule and reign in the lives of mankind.*

...that whoever believes in Him—*There are two types of people in the world: Those who believe the first words you have just read, and those who do not. The Bible says: **'In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God (John 1:1).** Truth be told, the words ¹⁶**For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son...**are the actual and first words God is speaking of. And continuing, basically, according to God; the only two types of people in the world are those who believe Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and those who do not.*

...should not perish but have everlasting life—*God created life. God did not create death. God is eternal and everlasting. He created life to be eternal and everlasting. God created life because He loves life, and God wants nothing more and nothing less from life, than for that life, the life He created [in both created beings, and the nature and existence of life as a state of being] to be with Him, and again, a part of Him from The Beginning until The End.*

¹⁷**For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved....***God did not send Jesus into a world of both holiness and sin; of both friends and enemies; and of both life and death—so that the death of Jesus would not have meaning or work in saving mankind. God did not create Hell and eternal condemnation so that the same creation He loves would go there and be apart from Him to the eternal end. God said He is “long-suffering and wants for none to perish.” That is why He waits so long and does not allow Satan to take more lives than he already has. But only through Jesus, and the mankind who believes and follows Jesus, can Jesus and man serve to save the lost bodies and spirits who need saving.*

TITLE: I AM GOD

I AM GOD... Autobiography—In the End — (John 15:12-14)



**“I AM GOD...
IN THE END.”**

John 15:12-14

¹²This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. ¹³Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one’s life for his friends. ¹⁴You are My friends if you do whatever I command you.

¹²This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you.—*God’s Commandment is to love. He also gave a Commandment that is inbred in the conscience and heart of every man: “thou shalt not kill.” Jesus Christ, God; loved man—He never asked or commanded man to kill one another. He created life and would be a two-way, double-minded, hypocritical, untruthful, nonsensical and hateful Man if He created a life, He loves only to see it killed. Jesus Christ came to earth as God; to teach man that there are two ways of being: man may be holy or sinful, good or evil, loving or hateful, dead or alive.*

¹³Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one’s life for his friends.—*Jesus laid down His life for mankind because mankind is sinful and heading for death. If Jesus did not die for the sins of mankind, no man could ever make it to Heaven and be with God again. Basically, Jesus died for those sinful, murderous enemies of God: man. From Adam at the beginning, to you and me in the end; Jesus would rather die and see man go to Heaven—than for Jesus, Himself, to live and man go to Hell.*

¹⁴You are My friends if you do whatever I command you.—*One of Jesus’ last commands, his final words, were “Forgive them Father...” When you kill another man for his sin [or yours]—when did or do you forgive him? How did or do you forgive him? Truth be told you did not truly forgive him—it is impossible, according to God, to kill another man and offer him forgiveness; impossible. Therefore, you are not a friend of Jesus if you do not keep this One Commandment; the One He called: “My Commandment.”*

In other words...

The life of God is simple.

God created man. God loves man. God loves man's life. A Creation that is loved, when created, is given a choice to obey and follow or disobey and not follow its Creator. Adam, the first man, disobeyed God and brought on all of creation, including himself and all his descendants; every man, woman and child ever born: sin and death.

On one hand, just as God created all that is alive and good—on the other hand; sinful Satan, the disobedient, deceitful devil is responsible for everything that is evil and deadly. And all of mankind has a choice to live with God or die with the devil. And God knows that there will be two-kinds of men: those who believe in Him and those who do not. And God also knows, that apart from His love and forgiveness of man's sin, that death would come on all men, and all of mankind would be eternally separated and have no life with God.

God then sent His Son and came to earth as a man. Like the man He created, God is body and God is Spirit. God is the persons of God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit—and God knows that there are two kinds of people: those who believe this and those who do not.

Now, God has given a choice to those who believe in Him in the person of Jesus Christ. And that choice is to love, forgive, and save the lives of the world of people who do not believe. Because, just as Jesus did on the cross; He chose to die for the sins and evil in man, rather than to save His own life. See, a Christian disciple or one who follows Jesus, has the calling and responsibility to do just as Jesus did. God knows that anyone who does not believe in Him is going to die and go to Hell. And only Jesus, and His disciples, and friends can serve to save these lost unbelievers from losing out on the eternal love of God and eternal life with Him in Heaven.

Therefore, when God commands man to forgive and love one another; it is done to save their lives. This means the sinful, evil people who do not believe God or are His enemies; these people are also a Christian's "enemies." However, God commands man to "love their enemies." This is because without love and the forgiveness that follows—these people will never come to know Jesus and will die apart from God, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit for all of eternity. These "enemies" will go to Hell. Truth be told, someone that kills anything or anyone—not only breaks a command, and commits a sin, they will have to answer to God for that unholy sin at The Judgment. In addition, the killer is determining the eternal fate of whatever or whomever they kill at the time they are murdered. From a truly spiritual perspective or viewpoint, man might as well have only two choices: To tell people about the life-saving Jesus; or to be a life-taker and kill one another.

The truth of the matter is: “The best of both worlds” for God, the best of “the evil and the good”; is that a true Christian do everything in their power, from teaching to dying, in order to save the life of the opposition or the lost; because God knows this way both persons will go to be with God in Heaven. Basically, if Christian’s kill non-Christians: no one wins. Sin has gone against sinner and killer against killing; in which case only evil and death will win. This is why Jesus Christ died for man’s sins, because God knew it was a “win-win” situation.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—The 5 Attributes of God

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

These truthful words come from Charles Stanley of In Touch Ministries.

The 5 attributes of God are:

- Eternal
- All-Powerful [omnipotent]
- All-Knowing [omniscient]
- All-Present [omnipresent]
- Unchangeable

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—5 Facts about God—The Levels of Understanding God

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Salvation, Baptism, the indwelling of the Holy Spirit—the different levels of a person’s divine inspiration and understanding are in the Order of God—but once you read, hear, or are divinely-inspired with a new and greater understanding; that, then, becomes a commandment for you to follow.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—5 Facts about God—

†

**“I AM GOD...
I AM A GOD TO WHOM ALL THINGS ARE VISIBLE.
BUT TO YOU THEY MAY APPEAR INVISIBLE;
THEREFORE, LOOKOUT FOR THE INVISIBLE.”**

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—5 Facts about God—“I’d Rather Not Be Lucky than Good, God.”

†

**“I AM GOD...
THERE IS NO SUCH THING AS LUCK.”**

Mark my words...

Instead of wishing someone “Good luck”; they would be more blessed if you were to say, “More power to’ya.”

In other words...

The more workable and truthful option would be to simply say, “God Bless.”

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—5 Facts about God—God Is Not Patient As Previously Reported, Man Is Too Impatient. God Is Always On Time.

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

God is patient...if for no other reason than the fact man is too fast. And the reason man is fast, is because man's time frame is limited. Every person alive, in one way or another, automatically condenses their life into the timeframe or lifespan of let's say, at least 100 years [and any fraction of time less than that]. God, on the other hand, His timespan is limitless, and His idea of our lifespan is eternal.

Secondly, man will naturally try to do things in his own time and by his own hand; when in truth, God wants to be the one to do it all. So, if man does not keep that in mind, he will naturally try to do everything in his own time and place, and by his own doing. And, in fact, he is going directly opposite of God's perfectly timed plan.

Thirdly, and this lesson I had to learn from Charles Stanley, and I can certainly see that it is true...God has to rule and use the entire universe when working to bring into time our plans. It is only by God that we can achieve, reach or receive anything—and apart from God's working of something miraculous, more times than not, He has to work, plan, and strategically bring together all the circumstances and people [both godly and ungodly] to create and bring forth that which we so impatiently long for.

Finally, God's timing involves so much more than what we think as time. For man, time is about minutes and seconds. For man, our perspective is that time has a past, present and future. We can “space” out time and understand it in three directions, so to speak. For God, everything is in what I will call the “eternal now.” For Him, all His focus, energy and concern are concentrated on the present—and still, His past is the eternal past; His present, the “eternal present”; and His future the eternal future. With all that time on His hands, it's no wonder that the mortal, sinful, human nature of man has no patience for God.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—5 Facts about God—Fear of God — (Genesis 22:12)

†

“I AM GOD...”

Genesis 22:12

¹²And He said, “Do not lay your hand on the lad, or do anything to him; for now I know that you fear God, since you have not withheld your son, your only son, from Me.”

Mark my words...

As a human being, I have two choices when it comes to believing in Jesus Christ as the Son of God. I can either believe that He is—and that He, alone, is the way to eternal life in Heaven with He and God—or I can believe that Jesus is not the Son of God, or God, and is just another man. So, I choose to believe He is God’s Son—and yet, at times, I may have cause to doubt. So I think of it this way: If He truly is the Son of God, then when I die, if He is there in Heaven and truly is one-in-the-same with God—then I made the right, life-saving decision to believe and trust in Him.

However, if Jesus is not God; and God is just the God (or any god of any religion) I believe in—then I can’t believe God will evict me from Heaven for either putting my faith in this Christ; or for being deceived by this Man, Jesus, who said He is God; and by His “disciples” who wrote in the Bible about Him.

But, if Jesus Christ truly is who He said He was; and those who wrote about Him in The Bible were telling the truth, and I choose not to believe this truth—then what happens when I die and get to Heaven and it turns out that Jesus Christ is God; and He tells me to leave because I chose not to believe, trust and put my faith in Him? Then I would have made the wrong, life-threatening decision...and that fear, my friends, scares the Hell out of me.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—7 Secrets to Scripture—1. The Writer

†

**“I AM GOD...
I AM THE WRITER OF THE BIBLE.”**

Mark my words...

The Bible, the Word of God, is symbolic, figurative, and literal. It is as if man wanted to go from Point-A to Point-B: he could walk with his feet firmly on the ground or he could even run. He could also jump, and his feet do not touch the ground between his first step and his last. Finally, he could be lifted by a strong wind, or a mighty bird and his feet never touch the ground.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—7 Secrets to Scripture—2. Writing and Reading



**“I AM GOD...
SPIRITUALLY SPEAKING, THERE IS NO DIFFERENCE
BETWEEN DIVINELY INSPIRED WRITERS WHO WRITE
AND DIVINELY INSPIRED READERS WHO READ.”**

Mark my words...

The Word of God, the Bible, is said to be divinely inspired by the Holy Spirit. God’s Words and the revealing of God to man constitute the divinely inspired Words of God. And with that divine guidance, in The Spirit-inspired Bible; therefore, it must be reasoned that the Holy Spirit supersedes or rules over the Bible. Man’s goal in searching through the Word of God should be to become divinely inspired not only as were the writers divinely inspired, but the Bible was written so the reader could be enlightened as well. When a verse is read, it may have ten “effects” or meanings to one reader, or one meaning or “effect” to ten readers. And that “effect” is the Holy Spirit; as long as the “effect,” message and meaning is in truth and in keeping with the character and very nature of God.

Often times, man may be teaching or communicating with other men apart from the presence of the Holy Spirit within them. That is why the Holy Spirit leads us to pray and understands the Scriptures and we must have His presence within us or we will stray from the truth and the correct meaning and message. We know, since the devil quoted Scripture, even Satan knows the Bible. It is the Holy Spirit that leads us in prayer and to salvation; and it is He that we need to rely on. And since He wrote the Good Book, He supersedes the Scripture. Sometimes people will unwisely, almost irreverently, rely on the Bible apart from The Spirit. At which point, they may only be reading words and not the Word; and not fully understanding the true nature of God, and The Spirit, behind the meaning of the words and life of Christ.

For example, when you watch a movie or even read the accompanying screenplay, you will likely come away not knowing or remembering all the words, but you will have a “feeling” or the spirit, theme, message, and inspiration of the movie. Spiritually speaking, there is no difference between divinely inspired writers who write and divinely inspired readers when they read.

ITL: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—7 Secrets to Scripture—3. Bible Dimensions / The Old and the New Testament

†

**“I AM GOD...
THE FIRST PROMISE
WAS TO GET JESUS THERE IN BODY.
THE FINAL PROMISE
IS TO GET YOU TO JESUS IN YOUR BODIES.”**

Mark my words...

The Old Testament: The First Promise—was to get Jesus here in body. The New Testament: The Final Promise—is to get us to Jesus in our bodies.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—7 Secrets to Scripture—4. How to Develop a Personal Relationship with the Bible

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

There are three meanings or applications [and 2 and 3 are similar] for all Scripture and the communicative relationship God’s Word has with man.

1. How it applies to what God, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit does toward man.

God

↓

Man

2. How man is to act in order to be one with God—what we are to do to please Him.

God

↑

Man

3. How it applies to humans on the way man should act toward one another.

Man ↔ Man

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—7 Secrets to Scripture—5. Understanding the Bible



**“I AM GOD...
IN PRAYER, AND BY MEDITATING WITH ME;
AND UNDER THE AUTHORITY AND THE POWER
OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, YOU NEED TO THINK ON THE WAY
I WAS AS A MAN AND THE WAY I AM AS GOD.
FAITHFUL AND THOUGHTFUL STUDY
SHOULD BE GIVEN BY YOU TO DISCOVER AND
REVEAL MY KNOWLEDGE ON MY SUPERNATURAL
NATURE AND MY ETERNALLY MEANINGFUL WORD.”**

Mark my words...

We need to read “between the lines” and “read into” the Bible because not all chapters and verses are included in written order in the Scriptures. As well, many of the recordings and writings are not in chronological order. This is why we are to pray to The Spirit of God and be in The Spirit of God; in order to hear from God and discern from God, that which is not written in the Bible, but in truth is still the Word of God.

To briefly explain “reading between the lines”; think of the term “Holy Trinity.” Truly, God is God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit; yet, nowhere in The Word of God, the Bible, is that term written. Nonetheless, the connection is there and is understood to be the truth of the written or spoken words of God.

*To further explain “reading between the lines”; refer to words and phrases such as **“The word of the Lord” (Luke 3:2, 8:25; Acts 8:14, 11:16, 16:32) or “The word of God” (Acts 18:26).** From God’s perspective these may also be called or understood to be **“the Gospel” (Matthew 11:5; Mark 1:1, 16:5; Luke 7:22, 20:1, Acts 8:25; 1 Corinthians 1:17).***

In other words...

*Also, let it be revealed that there is further understanding, or additional perspectives that may be applied to Scripture when humanly attempting to study the writing from the infinite wisdom of God. For example: “**The way of God**” may be understood to mean the nature, truth or workings of God. The meaning may also be expanded when thinking of the words of Christ who said: “**I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me...**” When reading the wording in “context” and in relation to the Bible verse recorded before it which reads: **Thomas said to Him, “Lord, we do not know where You are going, and how can we know the way?”** One understanding can be that Jesus is speaking about a direction, path, or means of following Him.*

*Yet, when researching further and thinking more comprehensively; “**the way**” may also be applied to being a Christian or Christianity. Certainly, to follow or be a disciple of Jesus is to be referred to as being a “**Christian.**” But, in The Book of Acts, Chapter 19, verse 9; the writer calls the early Christian church or belief system “**the Way.**”*

’But when some were hardened and did not believe, but spoke evil of the Way before the multitude, he departed from them and withdrew the disciples, reasoning daily in the school of Tyrannus.

On further study, there is learnedness that may be achieved by understanding what a Scripture or words may say when thinking of the opposite position or “what is not being said.” For example: a person who is not “saved” is “unsaved.” A person who does not “believe” is an “unbeliever”; and a person who is not going, or does not go to Heaven, is going to Hell—just as a person who is “unsaved” or “not saved” will be lost in Hell. Let it be understood that words and wording such as “everlasting life” and “Kingdom of God”; can certainly be understood to mean “Heaven.” As well, in opposition to “eternal life,” or Heaven, is: Hell. Therefore, what is not mentioned as Heaven will mean Hell.

Again, we may read the Scriptures, in a sense, negatively. That is: the negative of “truth” is “lie”; and since the opposite of “right” is “wrong”—we may “read into” Scripture and expand our understanding by reading the negative or positive side of what is being said. In addition, we may also gain greater understanding by what is not written or said [in a sense, this is just the opposite of what is being written].

*In addition, in further study, there is a knowledge and understanding that may be gained by the steps, process, or connections between a word and wording in Scripture. For example: “**being saved**” or “**salvation**” certainly requires “**ascension into Heaven.**” What may be written in the word “**perfect**” (since man must be made “**perfect**” as, and through, Christ to be in Heaven); means Heaven, ascension into Heaven, and salvation. As well, it may then be understood in wording or expressions such as; “**risen or arise**”; “**raised up**” or “**...he***

was taken up” to mean the ascension into Heaven; mind you, the **“ascension”** or **“raising up”** that leads man to **“salvation.”**

*In further examples: the expression **“came up out of the water”** also lends its meaning to salvation. As well, since an **“unbeliever”**; the **“unsaved”** and those destined to or who choose to go to Hell, will not see Heaven—expressions such as **“shall not see God”**; **“wrath of God”**; **“eternal judgment”**; **“...who’s end is to be burned”**; **“...thrown into the fire”**; **“unquenchable fire”**; and **“shall not see life,”** all lead to meaning **“unbeliever,” “unsaved,”** and Hell.*

In faith, I trust you will think on each word; all the words; every Scripture Chapter and Verse; as well as “reading between the lines” and “reading into” The Word of The Lord to understand The Ways of God.

My last words...

Lastly, by example, there are different things people can read as instruction on various aspects of living the Christian life [ex. How to achieve salvation: “Believe...” —“Obey my commands...” —“Stand firm..."]. Throughout the Bible there are different steps or levels along a person’s spiritual journey or walk with Christ. Jesus knows that every seed planted does not take root, and if it does take root, each plant may grow to a different height. Some plants, in a greater presence of the sun, and a thirst and overflow of water, will grow differently than other plants. And just as a building begins with a foundation, the building reaches greater heights as the builder sets stone-upon-stone, level-upon-level.

TITLE: I AM GOD

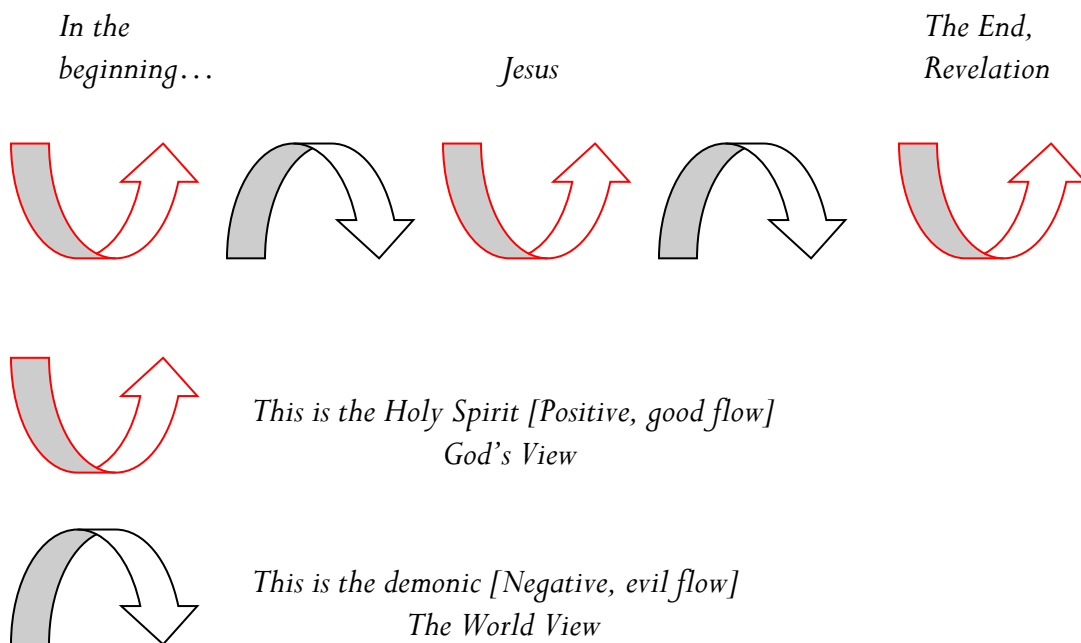
NUMBERS—7 Secrets to Scripture—6. The Flow of the Bible

†

**“I AM GOD...
WHILE THE BIBLE IS TRUE—
THERE IS A DESIGN AND A FLOW TO IT.
THE FLOW IS THE MOVEMENT FROM GOOD AND
PERFECTION TO EVIL AND IMPERFECTION.”**

Mark my words...

Here is a “Biblical Flow Chart”:



In other words...

For example:

MANKIND

- *It is best to be alone with God—Adam.*
- *Then it is good to have a wife—Eve.*
- *Then it is acceptable to have many wives—Solomon.*
- *Then we have Jesus, again, alone with God.*
- *Then men with wives.*
- *And lastly, in the Revelation, John says we don't have husbands or wives, but all are married to God.*

FOOD

- *Vegetarian only.*
- *Then “clean” and “unclean” [Animals who die or are dead].*
- *Then vegetarians “weaker in faith” overeating the dead [because of the uncertainty over what is “clean or unclean” or which has been killed by man, or died because of sinful nature, or animals killing one another].*

AGE

- *Man born eternal.*
- *Then 800 years [Noah].*
- *Then eternal again [through Jesus].*
- *Then, today, 70 or 80-years-old.*
- *Then abortions [only minutes].*
- *Then eternal again [The Revelation].*

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—7 Secrets to Scripture—7. The Gospel to Read or the Gospel Heard Around the World



**“I AM GOD...
WHEN YOU HEAR THE GOSPEL,
I WILL TOUCH YOUR INNER SPIRIT;
OR SPEAK TO YOU IN A SILENCE WITHIN YOUR
CONSCIENCE AND YOU WILL HAVE THE OPPORTUNITY
TO BELIEVE IN ME.”**

Mark my words...

If you choose not to listen there is also no excuse. The Bible says: it is wrong to not believe in God if you have seen or witnessed the created glory of nature.

In other words...

Let's suppose you have not seen nature, or are blind, or let's say comatose as a baby. God will still send the Holy Spirit to invite you to accept Jesus Christ. God will not let anyone go through this life and not hear about His Son, Jesus.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—The Seven Things Jesus said in one Sentence — (John 14:6)



**“I AM GOD...
JESUS SAID: ‘I AM THE WAY, THE TRUTH, AND THE LIFE...
NO ONE COMES TO THE FATHER BUT BY ME.”**

Mark my words...

THE WAY: Jesus is and was God, as a man, making His WAY on the earth.

THE TRUTH: The Holy Spirit reveals THE TRUTH.

THE LIFE: God is the Creator of LIFE.

1). These words were spoken by The Lord God Himself. Jesus, Himself, was and is: “The Word.”

2). The Word—These words come from the Bible. It is God’s communication to His creation. In the Bible, John the apostle wrote: “Jesus was the Word from the beginning...” The Word...

3). “**JESUS SAID...**” —The statement, as a whole, decrees you must believe; have faith in; and listen to Jesus.

4). “**...THE WAY...**”—THE WAY is the place or path to follow. A person must choose to follow or disciple Jesus. Jesus, Himself, said: “Follow Me.”

5). “**...THE TRUTH...**”—There is one TRUTH. God is singular (existing in oneness). There is one TRUTH...everything else must be a lie!

6). “**...THE LIFE...**”—LIFE: God’s first act was creating or creation. The first words of the Bible are: “In the beginning, God created...” God’s first characteristic, and action; was that of the instituting, making, and the creating of...LIFE. Eventually, upon the making of man...man’s choice, meaning, and viewpoint on LIFE...is the starting point, the pinnacle, the love and heart, the nature of God. LIFE is the meaning of man’s existence.

7). **“...No one comes to The Father, but by Me.”**—In the beginning and in the end, Jesus and The Father are one. They are one in the same. Jesus said, in His own words: “The first shall be last and the last shall be first”; in this sentence, alone, the initial two words: “Jesus said,” and the final six words of Jesus’ statement: “...to the Father but by me.” In combination, the wording essentially means; He’s not only speaking about place, but about person: The Person of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. Jesus said, “I and the Father are one. If you have seen me, you have seen the Father.” On earth, in our mind, this means both are either together in the same place, or they are together as the same person. However, only in the end, in the eternal LIFE, shall we see THE WAY, THE TRUTH and THE LIFE of all three: The Holy Trinity of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit together as one in Heaven.

The world began with LIFE, God’s LIFE; God’s LIFE, not deceived, fallen, imperfect mans. God’s justice is that earthly LIFE will end in earthly death. However, “The Judgment”; is the final determination on man’s choice concerning LIFE. It was Adam’s, and it is ours. Remember: “Sin is death.” LIFE (and death, brought about by man, who, mind you, is created in: “...the image and likeness of God”—“And by man death entered, and so by A Man, Christ, death is defeated.”) LIFE, and the love of LIFE; is the core and the nature of God.

Today, it is man’s choice and acceptance of Jesus and LIFE that is the sole determining factor on who enters the holy throne of Heaven. And be warned, loved ones, as Jesus spoke about those who “...in His name”; He would tell to leave only to depart to Hell. And many religions, Christians and “Born Again” Christians, having been misled, will be led away by the angels. In the end, the eternal LIFE God once created is the eternal, soulful LIFE that Holy God can only accept.

THE WAY: Jesus died to make THE WAY.

THE TRUTH: The Holy Spirit will spiritually show you THE TRUTH...

THE LIFE: And God, the Father: He is THE LIFE.

1. John 14:6 / 2. 1 John 1:1-2 / 3. John 1:3-5 / 4. Mark 1:17 / 5. Genesis 1:1 / 6. Matt. 20:16, Mark 10:31, Luke 13:30 / 7. John 10:30, 14:9 / 8. Matt. 5:21, John 5:22, Heb. 9:27 / 9. Romans 6:23 / 10. Genesis 1:26 / 11. Romans 5:12 / 12. Matt. 7:21-23, 25:42, 25:46 / 13. John 3:3, 3:7

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—9-11-01—*Was the Attack on New York City God's Judgment?*

†

**“I AM GOD...
YES!”**

Romans 2:1-11

God's Righteous Judgment

The Fairness of God's Judgment

¹Therefore you are inexcusable, O man, whoever you are who judge, for in whatever you judge another you condemn yourself; for you who judge practice the same things. ²But we know that the judgment of God is according to truth against those who practice such things. ³And do you think this, O man, you who judge those practicing such things, and doing the same, that you will escape the judgment of God? ⁴Or do you despise the riches of His goodness, forbearance, and longsuffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leads you to repentance? ⁵But in accordance with your hardness and your impenitent heart you are treasuring up for yourself wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God, ⁶who “will render to each one according to his deeds”: ⁷eternal life to those who by patient continuance in doing good seek for glory, honor, and immortality; ⁸but to those who are self-seeking and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness—indignation and wrath, ⁹tribulation and anguish, on every soul of man who does evil, of the Jew first and also of the Greek; ¹⁰but glory, honor, and peace to everyone who works what is good, to the Jew first and also to the Greek. ¹¹For there is no partiality with God.

Mark my words...

Everything is God's judgment. God judges everything.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—9-11-01—9-11—“Thou Shalt Not Kill.”

†

**“I AM GOD...
THOU SHALT NOT KILL.”**

Mark my words...

In the Old Testament—

*God told the Jews and the world: **THOU SHALT NOT KILL.** Period. Not...except if:*

- *The sinner kills a store clerk in cold blood—let’s put that criminal to death.*
- *I’m hopeless, depressed and suicidal.*
- *The baby is unwanted.*
- *I don’t like you; you made me angry.*
- *“They tried killing me first—it was self-defense.”*
- *“Our country wants to expand its territory...”*
- *“But they shot our building down...”*
- *And “they are going to attack and kill us eventually....”*

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—9-11-01—9-11—“Love Me and Love Your Neighbor.”

†

**“I AM GOD...
LOVE ME AND LOVE YOUR NEIGHBOR.”**

In other words...

In the New Testament—

Jesus told the Christians: “LOVE GOD AND LOVE YOUR NEIGHBOR.” Period.

Not...except if:

- *A criminal kills a store clerk in cold blood—let’s put that person to death.*
- *I’m hopeless, depressed and suicidal.*
- *The baby is unwanted.*
- *I don’t like you; you made me angry.*
- *“They tried killing me first—it was self-defense.”*
- *“Our country wants to expand its territory...”*
- *“But they shot our building down...”*
- *And “they are going to attack and kill us eventually....”*

The last word is...

Praise Jesus.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—9-11-01—I Am Perfect

†

“I AM GOD... I AM PERFECT.”

Mark my words...

In the days following the September 11, 2001 sin in New York City; after hearing responses from the spiritual leaders of the world, the government leaders, the media, the experts and a cross-section of the general public; I was at a meeting of Pastor Benny Hinn when the Holy Spirit spoke to me. He, the Holy Spirit, the direct voice of God, spoke one word. The word was PERFECT. The following writing is transcribed directly from the Word of God, the Holy Bible:

In the concordance {index} of The Holy Bible {New International Version}, the word PERFECT (PERFECTOR, PERFECTION) appears in 17 listings. In exact order, according to the Books of the Bible, this is which is written in the first 7 entries of The Word of God:

Psalm 119:89

The Word in all the Earth...

Your word, O LORD, is eternal; it stands firm in the heavens. Your faithfulness continues through all generations; you established the earth, and it endures. Your laws endure to this day, for all things serve you. If your law had not been my delight, I would have perished in my affliction. I will never forget your precepts, for by them you have preserved my life. Save me, for I am yours; I have sought out your precepts. The wicked are waiting to destroy me, but I will ponder your statutes. To all PERFECTION I see a limit; but your commands are boundless.

Song of Songs 6:8-9

The United States...

Sixty queens there may be, and eighty concubines and virgins beyond number; but my dove, my PERFECT one, is unique, the only daughter of her mother, the favorite of the one who bore her. The maidens saw her and called her blessed; the queens and concubines praised her.

Isaiah 26:3-6 (7-21)

New York City...

We have a strong city; God makes salvation its walls and ramparts. Open the gates that the righteous nation may enter, the nation that keeps faith. You will keep in PERFECT him whose mind is steadfast, because he trusts in you. Trust in the LORD forever, for the LORD, the LORD, is the Rock eternal. He humbles those who dwell on high, he lays the lofty city low; he levels it to the ground and casts it down to the dust. Feet trample it down—the feet of the oppressed, the footsteps of the poor.

Matthew 5:43-48

What Would Jesus Do?...

“You have heard that it is said, ‘Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. If you love those who love you, what reward will you get? Are not even the tax collectors doing that? And if you greet only your brothers, what are you doing more than others? Do not even pagans do that? Be PERFECT, therefore, as your heavenly Father is PERFECT.

Romans 12:(1)-2

The Answer...

Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is—his good, pleasing and PERFECT will.

2 Corinthians 12:9

Why?...

But he said to me, “My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made PERFECT in weakness.

2 Corinthians 13:11

Good-By...

Finally, brothers, good-by. Aim for PERFECTION, listen to my appeal, be of one mind, live in peace. And the God of love and peace will be with you. Greet one another with a holy kiss. All the saints send their greetings. May Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—9-11-01—I Am Perfect [Alternate]

†

“I AM GOD... I AM PERFECT.”

Mark my words...

In the days following the September 11, 2001, sin in New York City; after hearing responses from the spiritual leaders, the government leaders, the media, the experts and a cross-section of the general public; I was at a church meeting when the Holy Spirit spoke to me. He, the Holy Spirit, the voice of God, spoke one word. The word was perfect. This writing is transcribed directly from The Word of God, the Bible:

In the concordance {index} of The Holy Bible {New International Version}, the word perfect (perfector, perfection) appears in 17 listings. In exact order, according to the Books of the Bible, this is written in the opening 8 places of The Word of God:

Where Would Jesus Do?...

The Word in all the Earth...

Psalm 119:89

Your word, O LORD, is eternal; it stands firm in the heavens. Your faithfulness continues through all generations; you established the earth, and it endures. Your laws endure to this day, for all things serve you. If your law had not been my delight, I would have perished in my affliction. I will never forget your precepts, for by them you have preserved my life. Save me, for I am yours; I have sought out your precepts. The wicked are waiting to destroy me, but I will ponder your statutes. To all perfection I see a limit; but your commands are boundless.

The United States...

Song of Songs 6:8-9

Sixty queens there may be, and eighty concubines and virgins beyond number; but my dove, my perfect one, is unique, the only daughter of her mother, the favorite of the one who bore her. The maidens saw her and called her blessed; the queens and concubines praised her.

New York City...

Isaiah 26:3-5

We have a strong city; God makes salvation its walls and ramparts. Open the gates that the righteous nation may enter, the nation that keeps faith. You will keep in perfect peace him whose mind is steadfast, because he trusts in you. Trust in the LORD forever, for the LORD, the LORD, is the Rock eternal. He humbles those who dwell on high, he lays the lofty city low; he levels it to the ground and casts it down to the dust.

What Would Jesus Do?...

Matthew 5:43-48

“You have heard that it is said, ‘Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. If you love those who love you, what reward will you get? Are not even the tax collectors doing that? And if you greet only your brothers, what are you doing more than others? Do not even pagans do that? Be perfect, therefore, as your heavenly Father is perfect.”

Who Would Jesus Do?...

Romans 12:1-2

Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is—his good, pleasing and perfect will.

Why Would Jesus Do?...

***1 Corinthians 13:1-10**

And now I will show you the most excellent way. If I speak in the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I am only a resounding gong or a clanging cymbal. If I have the gift of prophecy and can fathom all mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have a faith that can move mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. If I give all I possess to the poor and surrender my body to the flames, but have not love, I gain nothing. Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres. Love never fails. But where there are prophecies, they will cease; where there are tongues, they will be stilled; where there is knowledge, it will pass away. For we know in part and we prophesy in part, but when perfection comes, the imperfect disappears.

How Would Jesus Do?...

2 Corinthians 12:9

But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness."

The Final Answers...

2 Corinthians 13:11 Finally, brothers, good-bye. Aim for perfection, listen to my appeal, be of one mind, live in peace. And the God of love and peace will be with you. Greet one another with a holy kiss. All the saints send their greetings. May Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all.

Note:

***1 Corinthians 13:1-10** *This Scripture was heard at this appointed time. The word perfection appears in this passage, but is not listed (under perfect, perfection) in the concordance.*

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—9-11-01—If You Want To Kill Somebody: Kill Me.

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

If you want to kill somebody: kill me. I would rather die than to “defend myself until the death”...yours and mine. I would rather die having had the opportunity to tell you about Jesus Christ, the Prince of Peace and the giver of eternal life; than to see you die and perish apart from Him, in Hell, for all of eternity.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—9-11-01—Satan is “Alive and Well”

†

**“I AM GOD...
SATAN IS ALIVE AND WELL.”**

Mark my words...

9-11-02	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-03	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-04	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-05	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-06	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-07	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-08	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-09	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-10	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-11	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”
9-11-12	SATAN IS “ALIVE AND WELL.”

In other words...

*In the United States—“Terrorists” attack and murder the people of this “Christian” nation...
SATAN IS ALIVE!*

*In the United States—This “Christian” nation attacks and murders the “terrorist” people...
SATAN IS WELL.*

TITLE: I AM GOD
NUMBERS—The 10 Tenets



**“I AM GOD...
THERE ARE 10 GREAT MISCONCEPTIONS AND
MISINTERPRETATIONS IN CHRISTENDOM:**

**CREATION
SATAN
BAPTISM
FORGIVENESS
LIFE
GRACE
SALVATION
THE ANTICHRIST
THE CHURCH
REVELATION.”**

Mark my words...

These are the 10 greatest misconceptions and misinterpretations in Christendom...that God only knows...can get you killed. Thank God, literally, that the absolute truth of each of these tenets, commands, or doctrines is explained in this book. You may refer to the outline or guide written below for the brief, God-given, truthful thoughts on each of “The Ten.” For a detailed and eternally-life-saving explanation, please refer to the Chapters and Versions listed below.

Creation / versus Evolution
Satan / the devil
Baptism
Forgiveness
Life

Grace / versus works
Salvation / Eternal Security
The Antichrist / Anti-Christians
The Church / The Rapture of the Church
Revelation / Future Events

In other words...

And for how the Ten Tenets, “God only knows,” can get you killed is as such:

These Ten Tenets all work in unison. If you do not believe or possess one—then you do not truly possess any of them. If you possess all of them—you likely possess the Holy Spirit [But God only knows].

Now, that's not to say you won't sin from time-to-time, but you will first recognize in your own mind that you did commit a sin. Secondly, you will experience the guilt of that sin. Third, you will be convicted to repent and turn from that sin. And lastly, you will be renewed in The Spirit and not lose The Spirit within you nor be open to possession of an evil spirit.

Now, keep in mind; the power of God, Jesus Christ, and of the Holy Spirit is the only power you can use to “be inborn”; “maintain”; or resurrect The Spirit of God. It is never achievable by mastering manhood, but solely by servitude to The Master.

No man, nor I, can convict you; only the Holy Spirit can convict you. You may be aware of His presence whether He is in you or not. And the conviction you receive is not a condemnation [unless you die apart from the belief of God, the acceptance of Jesus Christ, and you're possessing the Holy Spirit]. The relationship and responsibility of determining, monitoring, or recuperating your spiritual condition is between you and God. It is through your personal relationship with Jesus Christ that defines who you are as a spiritual person to Him.

TITLE: I AM GOD

NUMBERS—12-Steps of Christian Discipleship



**“I AM GOD...
THIS IS CHRISTIAN DISCIPLESHIP.”**

1. LIFE

John 15:13

John 15:13

¹³Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one's life for his friends.

2. THE CREATION OF LIFE

Food

Adam & Eve in the Garden

Perfect

Matthew 5:43-48

Matthew 5:43-48

Love Your Enemies

⁴³“You have heard that it was said, “You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’⁴⁴But I say to you, love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you, ⁴⁵that you may be sons of your Father in heaven; for He makes His sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. ⁴⁶For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax collectors do the same? ⁴⁷And if you greet your brethren only, what do you do more than others? Do not even the tax collectors do so? ⁴⁸Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect.

Mark my words...

Matthew 5:48—"...be perfect." Only used here—one time—just like perfection itself—and see where Jesus talks about it.

3. CREATION Genesis 1:20-31

Genesis 1:26

²⁶Then God said, “Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.”

Genesis 1:26—“Let us”: Father, Son... “In our image”—if you kill man: you kill God and Jesus... “dominion”—is lordship, not the right to kill.

4. THE MEANING OF LIFE Genesis 2:1-25

Genesis 2:16-17

¹⁶And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, “Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat;

¹⁷but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die.”

Genesis 2:17—“...shall surely die.” Not, “I will kill you.” From this point on—when sin, leading to death, was introduced; God did all He could to keep mankind alive. He did it with Noah and many godly men.

5. THE 10 COMMANDMENTS + 2 IN THE NEW TESTAMENT Murder or killing

Exodus 20:1-21

Exodus 20:13

¹“You shall not murder.”

6. THE TWO GREAT COMMANDMENTS

Matthew 22:34-39

Matthew 22:34-39

The Scribes: Which Is the First Commandment of All?

³⁴But when the Pharisees heard that He had silenced the Sadducees, they gathered together. ³⁵Then one of them, a lawyer, asked Him a question, testing Him, and saying, ³⁶“Teacher, which is the great commandment in the law?”

³⁷Jesus said to him, “You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.” ³⁸This is the first and great commandment. ³⁹And the second is like it: “You shall love your neighbor as yourself.” ⁴⁰On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.”

7. JESUS THE CHRIST

8. THE NAME OF “JESUS”

John 17:1-26

John 17:1-26

Jesus Prays for Himself

¹Jesus spoke these words, lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said: “Father, the hour has come. Glorify Your Son, that Your Son also may glorify You, ²as You have given Him authority over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him. ³And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You

have sent.⁴I have glorified You on the earth. I have finished the work which You have given Me to do.⁵And now, O Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was.

Jesus Prays for His Disciples

⁶“I have manifested Your name to the men whom You have given Me out of the world. They were Yours, You gave them to Me, and they have kept Your word.⁷Now they have known that all things which You have given Me are from You.⁸For I have given to them the words which You have given Me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came forth from You; and they have believed that You sent Me.⁹“I pray for them. I do not pray for the world but for those whom You have given Me, for they are Yours.¹⁰And all Mine are Yours, and Yours are Mine, and I am glorified in them.¹¹Now I am no longer in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to You. Holy Father, keep through Your name those whom You have given Me, that they may be one as We are.¹²While I was with them in the world, I kept them in Your name. Those whom You gave Me I have kept; and none of them is lost except the son of perdition, that the Scripture might be fulfilled.¹³But now I come to You, and these things I speak in the world, that they may have My joy fulfilled in themselves.¹⁴I have given them Your word; and the world has hated them because they are not of the world, just as I am not of the world.¹⁵I do not pray that You should take them out of the world, but that You should keep them from the evil one.¹⁶They are not of the world, just as I am not of the world.¹⁷Sanctify them by Your truth. Your word is truth.¹⁸As You sent Me into the world, I also have sent them into the world.¹⁹And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, that they also may be sanctified by the truth.

Jesus Prays for All Believers

²⁰“I do not pray for these alone, but also for those who will believe in Me through their word;²¹that they all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You; that they also may be one in Us, that the world may believe that You sent Me.²²And the glory which You gave Me I have given them, that they may be one just as We are one:²³I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me.

²⁴“Father, I desire that they also whom You gave Me may be with Me where I am, that they may behold My glory which You have given Me; for You loved Me before the foundation of the world. ²⁵O righteous Father! The world has not known You, but I have known You; and these have known that You sent Me. ²⁶And I have declared to them Your name, and will declare it, that the love with which You loved Me may be in them, and I in them.”

9. “CHRISTIAN” Matthew 7:7-29

Matthew 7:7-29

Keep Asking, Seeking, Knocking

⁷“Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. ⁸For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened. ⁹Or what man is there among you who, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? ¹⁰Or if he asks for a fish, will he give him a serpent? ¹¹If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give good things to those who ask Him!

¹²Therefore, whatever you want men to do to you, do also to them, for this is the Law and the Prophets.

Matthew 7:12—“the Law” = the Commandment: “thou shalt not kill”—the “prophets” = Moses.

The Narrow Way

¹³“Enter by the narrow gate; for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and there are many who go in by it.

Matthew 7:13—“destruction”—Satan, death, the end of life.

¹⁴Because narrow is the gate and difficult is the way which leads to life, and there are few who find it.

Matthew 7:14—“leads to life.”

You Will Know Them by Their Fruits

¹⁵“Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep’s clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves. ¹⁶You will know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes from thornbushes or figs from thistles? ¹⁷Even so, every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. ¹⁸A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a bad tree bear good fruit. ¹⁹Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. ²⁰Therefore by their fruits you will know them.

I Never Knew You

²¹“Not everyone who says to Me, “Lord, Lord,’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven.

Matthew 7:21—“the will of my Father”—life/creation, forgiveness/new creation.

²²Many will say to Me in that day, “Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?” ²³And then I will declare to them, “I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!”

Build On the Rock

²⁴“Therefore whoever hears these sayings of Mine, and does them, I will liken him to a wise man who built his house on the rock: ²⁵and the rain descended, the floods came, and the winds blew and beat on that house; and it did not fall, for it was founded on the rock.

²⁶“But everyone who hears these sayings of Mine, and does not do them, will be like a foolish man who built his house on the sand: ²⁷and the rain descended, the floods came, and the winds blew and beat on that house; and it fell. And great was its fall.”

²⁸And so it was, when Jesus had ended these sayings, that the people were astonished at His teaching, ²⁹for He taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

10. DIE LIKE THE DISCIPLES
The 12 Commandments & 12 Disciples

John 17:1-26

John 17:1-26

Jesus Prays for Himself

Jesus Prays to God for His Disciples

¹Jesus spoke these words, lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said: “Father, the hour has come. Glorify Your Son, that Your Son also may glorify You,

²as You have given Him authority over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him.

John 17:2—“...eternal life...”

³And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent. ⁴I have glorified You on the earth. I have finished the work which You have given Me to do.

⁵And now, O Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was.

John 17:5—more than glory on earth: glory with the Father.

Jesus Prays for His Disciples

⁶“I have manifested Your name to the men whom You have given Me out of the world. They were Yours, You gave them to Me, and they have kept Your word. ⁷Now they have known that all things which You have given Me are from You. ⁸For I have given to them the words which You have given Me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came forth from You; and they have believed that You sent Me.

⁹“I pray for them. I do not pray for the world but for those whom You have given Me, for they are Yours.

John 17:9—“I do not pray for the world.”

¹⁰And all Mine are Yours, and Yours are Mine, and I am glorified in them. ¹¹Now I am no longer in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to You. Holy Father, keep through Your name those whom You have given Me, that they may be one as We are.

¹²While I was with them in the world, I kept them in Your name. Those whom You gave Me I have kept; and none of them is lost except the son of perdition, that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

John 17:12—“I kept them in Your name” or in your name that you gave me: “God and Jesus are one. The “son of perdition” is Judas, the son of destruction. Judas is the one who, in a sense, committed murder; he too, lost his life by his own murder.

¹³But now I come to You, and these things I speak in the world, that they may have My joy fulfilled in themselves. ¹⁴I have given them Your word; and the world has hated them because they are not of the world, just as I am not of the world.

¹⁵I do not pray that You should take them out of the world, but that You should keep them from the evil one.

John 17:15—“I do not pray that You should take them out of the world, but that You should keep them from the evil one.” Everything Jesus asked for, He got. The evil one, Satan; God answered this prayerful appeal because the disciples never killed anyone; not in defense—and never thereafter.

¹⁶They are not of the world, just as I am not of the world. ¹⁷Sanctify them by Your truth. Your word is truth. ¹⁸As You sent Me into the world, I also have sent them into the world. ¹⁹And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, that they also may be sanctified by the truth.

Jesus Prays for All Believers

²⁰“I do not pray for these alone, but also for those who will believe in Me through their word; ²¹that they all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You; that they also may be one in Us, that the world may believe that You sent Me.

²²And the glory which You gave Me I have given them, that they may be one just as We are one:

John 17:22—“I have given them the glory”: martyrdom.

²³I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me.

John 17:23—perfection.

²⁴“Father, I desire that they also whom You gave Me may be with Me where I am, that they may behold My glory which You have given Me; for You loved Me before the foundation of the world. ²⁵O righteous Father! The world has not known You, but I have known You; and these have known that You sent Me. ²⁶And I have declared to them Your name, and will declare it, that the love with which You loved Me may be in them, and I in them.”

11. BATTLE THE ANTICHRIST

Revelation 17:8

Revelation 17:8

⁸The beast that you saw was, and is not, and will ascend out of the bottomless pit and go to perdition. And those who dwell on the earth will marvel, whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world, when they see the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

Revelation 17:8—“...the Book of Life...”

12. LIFE

Genesis 1:1 – Revelation 22:21

TITLE: I AM GOD
NUMBERS—15 Points in War



**“I AM GOD...
BELOVED PEOPLE...WITH LOVE AND THE WORD,
I OFFER YOU THIS POINT-BY-POINT DOCUMENT ON THE
TRUTH AND NATURE OF THE WAR BETWEEN
THE USA AND IRAQ.”**

Mark my words...

#1...“JESUS”: The name of Jesus is above all other names (Philippians 2:9). And only by the name of Jesus will we be saved (Acts 4:12)—Christians should know this by the divine Word of God, the Holy Bible. Those who are lost need to seek God and ask the Holy Spirit to enlighten them as to who Jesus is. To that end, Christians need to speak of their Lord by this name.

**“I AM GOD...
I ASK YOU: WHERE IN THE NAME OF ‘GOD’, ‘SPIRIT’, OR
‘HIGHER POWER’, DO YOU HEAR THE NAME ‘JESUS’?
JESUS IS LORD.”**

In other words...

And the Bible, the Word of God, says: “Everyone who calls on the name of Jesus will be saved (Romans 10:13).”

#2...THE WORD OF GOD: The Bible not only reveals to mankind who and how God truly exists, it also declares that our greatest weapon in the war of Good vs. Evil is “the sword of the Spirit which is the Word of God” (Ephesians 6:12).

**“I AM GOD...
ANY WORD SPOKEN OR WRITTEN
WHICH IS NOT FROM THE HEART OF THE BIBLE OR FROM
MY SPIRIT IS A FALSE, DECEPTIVE, HATE-FILLED AND EVIL
THOUGHT FROM THE HEART, MIND AND SINFUL
NATURE OF MAN.”**

#3...PEOPLE: Jesus loves all people. He loves all people of all nations. He loves those in your nation and those in your nation—those in Iraq and in America. He loves Christians and non-Christians. He loves Jews and non-Jews. He loves Muslims and non-Muslims. Jesus loves the Saints and Jesus loves the Sinners. Jesus loved Moses and Muhammad.

**“I AM GOD...
I LOVE SADDAM HUSSEIN AND GEORGE BUSH.”**

In other words...

Jesus loves those who believe in Him and those who don't. Jesus loves those who accept Him and those who reject Him. Keep in mind; Jesus, Himself, said He “came to save, not to condemn those who were lost.”

#4...CONDEMNATION: Since Jesus said He did not come to “condemn but to save”; and since the truth is: anyone who dies without faith in Jesus Christ, as the Son of God, is damned to Hell for all of eternity. Let it be known...

**“I AM GOD...
WHEN A HUMAN BEING OR A PROFESSED ‘CHRISTIAN’;
KILLS, MURDERS, OR TAKES THE LIFE [FOR ANY REASON]
OF A NON-CHRISTIAN—THE TRUTH IN MY EYES IS SUCH
THAT: THE KILLER IS CONDEMNING THAT ‘VICTIM’ OR
NON-BELIEVER TO HELL FOR THE REST OF ETERNITY.”**

In other words...

Anyone who kills—or believes in killing an unsaved neighbor, “enemy,” or a “brother”—needs to understand and be prepared, themselves, to take responsibility and accountability for that sinful action.

**“I AM GOD...
A TRUE CHRISTIAN’S PRIMARY AND SOLE PURPOSE IN
LIFE—IS TO LOVE MANKIND ENOUGH TO NOT TAKE THE
LIFE BUT DIE FOR AND SAVE THE LIFE OF THE LOST.”**

#5...ENEMIES: Only Satan is the enemy. People or nations cannot be the enemy. Jesus knows how easy it is for people to love their friends. He declares that He “loves His enemies,” and He instructs us to “love our enemies.” He said, “But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you (Matthew 5:43-44).” This means, basically...

**“I AM GOD...
CHRISTIANS SHOULD BE PRAYING FOR NON-CHRISTIAN
AND ISLAMIC PEOPLE OR TROOPS EVEN BEFORE
PRAYING FOR THEMSELVES OR OTHER CHRISTIANS.”**

#6...THE DEVIL: The only war on Earth is between the forces of Evil and Darkness, against the forces of Good and The Light.

**“I AM GOD...
THE WAR IS NOT BETWEEN YOU PEOPLE,
BUT BETWEEN ME AND THE DEVIL—
AND PERSONS ARE NOT DEVILS.”**

In other words...

The devil is a fallen angel. And angels are spiritual beings created by God, just as people were created by God. There are innumerable angels and only one Satan. There will be billions of other people; and every other person, therefore, is either acting by their own choice, out of a sinful human nature, or on the directive of a demon spirit that possesses them.

#7...“WAR,” “TERRORISM,” AND THE “WAR AGAINST TERRORISM”: War and terrorism are not violence—they only involve violence. War and terrorism are not bombing—they only involve bombing. War and terrorism are not murder—they only involve murder.

**“I AM GOD...
WAR AND TERRORISM ARE SIN.
AND SIN IS THAT WHICH CREATES AND INVOLVES
DEATH, MURDER AND DESTRUCTION.”**

#8...PRAYER: Prayer is the greatest power known to man. Prayer is also the greatest weapon known to man. People do not fight against flesh, but against the spiritual forces of evil. The only way to fight against Satan is by asking the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit to help a person emerge victoriously. Christians the world over, and only those who seek to repent and accept Jesus as the Son of the Most High God; need to know they are the only persons who truly speak to God and will have Jesus, and the Holy Spirit, hear and answer their prayer.

**“I AM GOD...
EVERYONE ELSE ON EARTH,
WHO DOES NOT ACCEPT OR CALL ON MY SON, JESUS,
SHOULD KNOW THEIR SHOUTS OR WHISPERS ARE NO
MORE THAN VOCAL AIR BLOWING IN THE WIND.”**

#9...THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH: Jesus, The Teacher, and His followers are told to “pray unceasingly.” Islamic believers pray 5-times a day. Christians need to pray for our enemies. Muhammad was an imperfect child of God. And while Muhammad is not God; and in turn, his followers are deceived [as all religions are, apart from an understanding and knowledge that Jesus is the only Son of God]. We are told, in the Word of God, that a shepherd will leave his sheep to find the one which is lost.

**“I AM GOD...
CHRISTIANS NEED TO FIND YOUR MUSLIM BROTHERS
AND SISTERS AND WORK TO PRAY FOR THEM AND
SERVE TO HELP IN THEIR CONVERSION HAS
PASSIONATELY AS THE MUSLIM FAITHFUL SPREAD AND
ARE WILLING TO DIE FOR THEIR BELIEFS.”**

In other words...

After all, Jesus is The Good Shepherd of Salvation.

#10...REVENGE AND RETALIATION: God declares: “Vengeance is His and He will repay.” Jesus tells us to “...turn the other cheek.” Not once did He ever defend Himself or strike back. Jesus also went on to say: “Ask why did He hit Me.” And in human terms that means, “What does he want or need? How can I help or serve him?” Jesus told the world rulers that His followers were not fighting in a war of this world or “they would fight back.” When Jesus was captured, His apostle Peter, a Christian, was reprimanded by The Lord for striking Jesus’ persecutor with a sword.

**“I AM GOD...
ON HIS WAY TO THE CROSS,
TO DIE FOR THE LOVE OF AND SAVE SINFUL MAN—
WHEN PETER WANTED TO WAR AGAINST THE
AUTHORITIES AND STOP MY SON FROM BEING
MURDERED—
MY SON TOLD PETER HE WAS ACTING LIKE SATAN.”**

#11...REPENTANCE AND FORGIVENESS: Jesus wants His enemies and those who are deceived, as well as those who know Him, to repent and sin no more. All people need to repent, because “we have all sinned and fallen short of the Glory of God.” Repentance needs to be followed by forgiveness. Jesus will forgive all who ask. Christians need to ask and give forgiveness.

**“I AM GOD...
AND ONLY CHRISTIANS, WITH THE POWER OF MY SON,
JESUS, HAVE THE AUTHORITY TO GRANT ETERNAL,
HEAVENLY FORGIVENESS.”**

In other words...

This authority defined the personhood of The Savior.

#12...PERSONAL ACCOUNTABILITY: The “blame game” is human nature at its prideful worse. Adam did it with Eve, blaming her for handing him the apple. And in turn, Eve blamed the devil for giving the apple to her.

**“I AM GOD...
YOU WOULD RATHER ACCUSE OTHERS OF THE SINS AND
EVIL DEEDS YOU YOURSELVES COMMIT.”**

In other words...

It is a godly law of nature that you “reap what you sow.” Therefore, violence ALWAYS begets violence. Sin ALWAYS tempts by sin. And, disobedience ALWAYS incurs wrath.

#13...HYPOCRISY: If Jesus hated anything, He hated hypocrisy: He couldn’t live with “Thou shalt not kill” killers, or expressions like: “pre-emptive strike,” or “disarm or we will use arms to disarm you,” or “War on Terror”; this is hypocrisy and the words of hypocrites.

**“I AM GOD...
I DIED TO SET SINFUL MEN FREE—
I DID NOT KILL A SINGLE SOUL
TO SET ALL THE SINFUL SOULS FREE.”**

#14...“GOD BLESS AMERICA”: A human being lives and walks on his or her own feet and people should look first at the sins they commit. While it is understandable that people have a human desire to protect their homeland, we all have neighbors.

**“I AM GOD...
FROM MY VIEWPOINT, HEAVEN AND HELL ARE THE
NEIGHBORHOODS NEAREST TO YOU AND YOU NEED TO
PROTECT YOUR SOULS IN THE LIGHT OR DARKNESS OF
THOSE ETERNAL PLACES.”**

#15...PEACE: Peace equates to a comfortable, long life [in mankind’s mind, the freedom from death]. In the days, before the coming of Christ, man, like Noah, would humanly live for hundreds of years. Then came the death of Jesus. Now man lives for less than a hundred years. Not only is man’s time on earth decreasing, but also death comes now to a human being before birth [abortion]. If a person wants true peace, which equates to a long life—the freedom from death—a person must live in the peace of Christ. If not, war and death will escalate faster [again, equating to less peacefully] than it needs to, by our own choice and for each individually.

**“I AM GOD...
YOU NEED TO LIVE [AND DIE] LIKE MY SON,
JESUS CHRIST; THE TRUE CHRISTIAN.”**

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—1. Who Was Jesus?

Mark my words...

God has something to write to those wanting to know who Jesus was and is; and to those who say: "[Jesus is not God, but] Jesus was a great teacher and a good man: a prophet."

†

**"I AM GOD...
JESUS IS...AND HE IS MY SON.
AND JESUS AND I ARE ONE.
HE SAID...
'...HE WHO HAS SEEN ME HAS SEEN THE FATHER; SO HOW
CAN YOU SAY, "SHOW US THE FATHER" (JOHN 14:9)?
THEREFORE, I MUST WRITE YOU...
YOUR 'GREAT' AND 'GOOD' MAN MUST ALSO BE A LIAR
AND A FALSE PROPHET. THEREFORE, YOUR JUDGMENT
MUST BE WEAK AND ALL TOGETHER WRONG...
JESUS TRUTHFULLY AND RIGHTEOUSLY SAID:
'I AM GOD.'"**

John 10:30

³⁰I and My Father are one."

In other words...

To those who believe, Jesus is a "prophet" or a "great man." He said, "I am the Son of God." If He is only a "prophet" or "great man"; He's also a liar. What liar is a prophet? How foolish for those to believe such; because Jesus said: "I and the Father are one—if you have seen Me, you have seen the Father." You'd actually be wiser to just call Jesus a liar. Ask yourselves: "How wise am I to call a liar a 'good man', 'great man' or 'prophet?'" Therefore, either Jesus is who He says He is...God...or He is being deceived and is the greatest liar the world has ever known.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—2. Who Wasn't Jesus?

†

“I AM GOD...”

Daniel 3:25

²⁵**“Look!” he answered, “I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire; and they are not hurt, and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God.”**

Footnote—**3:25** Or *a son of the gods*.

Mark my words...

Many teachers, preachers and ministers instruct and believe the prophet Daniel is speaking about Jesus. He is not. As the included footnote dictates, some original texts had written: “...a son of the gods.” Now, while there is only the One God, and not “gods”; the only Old Testament reference to “son of god,” was not to mean or signify Christ, but an angel.

John 3:18

¹⁸**“He who believes in Him is not condemned; but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.**

In other words...

Jesus is the Son of God. Not like a creation, but a son like an earthborn father has a son. And while this is the truth, there is no human way or reason to understand how Jesus is God the Son, or the Son of God; and God Himself. It is humanly impossible. But that's just who He is: Jesus Christ is God. Jesus Christ is God, the Son.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—3. Why...Jesus as a Man?



**“I AM GOD...
JESUS BECAME A MAN
NOT SO HE COULD RELATE TO YOU—
BUT SO YOU COULD RELATE TO HIM.”**

Genesis 1:27

²⁷So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

Mark my words...

God, Jesus; made man in His own image. He knew and knows all about us. God came as a man so we could know all about Him. Often, I have heard or seen it taught that God became the man, Jesus, so He could better identify and understand mankind. This is improper.

In other words...

Jesus knew from the beginning who and how man was since He created man in His own image. The simple truth of the matter is: Jesus came so man could identify with Him. God became a man, Jesus was a man; so we might better understand Him! Jesus came to human life so man could see God “in the flesh.”

Luke 4:24 (Matthew 13:57, Mark 6:4)

²⁴Then He said, “Assuredly, I say to you, no prophet is accepted in his own country.”

My last words...

Jesus also knew that man would not recognize Him. As Jesus noted in Scripture; not only from the aspect of a teacher and a prophet when they preach and teach among their own kind, and where people can so easily take Him for granted—but this teaching by Jesus also relates to His appearance as a human being and His appearing [as a human being] on the face of the earth.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—4. Where Was Jesus?



**“I AM GOD...
THE GREATEST TEACHER A MAN COULD EVER KNOW—
IS THE ONE WHO TAUGHT HIM ABOUT JESUS CHRIST:
THE GREATEST TEACHER EVER KNOWN.”**

Luke 2:41-49

The Boy Jesus Amazes the Scholars

⁴¹His parents went to Jerusalem every year at the Feast of the Passover.

⁴²And when He was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem according to the custom of the feast. ⁴³When they had finished the days, as they returned, the Boy Jesus lingered behind in Jerusalem. And Joseph and His mother did not know it; ⁴⁴but supposing Him to have been in the company, they went a day's journey, and sought Him among their relatives and acquaintances. ⁴⁵So when they did not find Him, they returned to Jerusalem, seeking Him. ⁴⁶Now so it was that after three days they found Him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers, both listening to them and asking them questions. ⁴⁷And all who heard Him were astonished at His understanding and answers. ⁴⁸So when they saw Him, they were amazed; and His mother said to Him, “Son, why have You done this to us? Look, Your father and I have sought You anxiously.”

⁴⁹And He said to them, “Why did you seek Me? Did you not know that I must be about My Father's business?” ⁵⁰But they did not understand the statement which He spoke to them.

Jesus Advances in Wisdom and Favor

⁵¹Then He went down with them and came to Nazareth, and was subject to them, but His mother kept all these things in her heart. ⁵²And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and men.

Mark my words...

The Bible records Jesus in the temple basically learning, preparing for, and beginning His ministry. Although, keep in mind, when Jesus asked questions; He did not ask to learn the truth or for the knowledge about anything, He asked to incite learning and as a way of teaching. And He also asked questions to expose to others the thoughts, responses and hearts of each. As well, keep in mind, that while it appears His “public ministry” began at the age of thirty; He was the minister to the world from His birth and all of time in the eternal beginning and eternal end.

After Jesus was twelve years old, the Gospels pick-up His story at about the age of thirty when Jesus approached John the Baptist to be baptized; and received the Holy Spirit, thus commenced the “beginning” of Jesus’ “ministry.” Again, Jesus always had a “ministry”; He was always God.

In other words...

Now, in the Bible, there is basically no record of where Jesus was or what His life was like from age twelve until the time of His Baptism. In part, here is the undiscovered life of Jesus Christ from those times not recorded in the Bible.

- Jesus spent an incredible amount of time alone. Much of the reason there is nothing recorded about the life of Jesus during these times, is the fact that there was no one there to record it. Still, as evidenced by the testimony of the disciples and Bible writers when Jesus was in the “public eye”; He still spent a good amount of time alone praying to and communicating with His Father: The Father. He valued His time alone. He would not have desired to be alone during His public ministry had He not known the value of such during those years. Jesus was a man created like none other, truly one-of-a-kind; and when you are the most unique man in the history of existence, than being alone is “second nature.” Plus, He knew: He, like us, is born alone and we will die alone.

- Jesus, even at age twelve, was preaching and teaching about and from the Holy Scriptures. And when His “public ministry” began around 18-years later, He was still quoting, reading, teaching and preaching the Scriptures and Word of God. There is no reason to think that He wasn’t studying Scriptures during that time. If anything, since Jesus wrote the Holy Books, truthfully, He was reading to see if the writers had correctly recorded that which He had spiritually inspired for them before His virgin birth.

- During the unrecorded times in the life of Jesus Christ, He spent a great amount of time fasting and praying. Jesus is the most “spiritual” man ever created. And He knows that praying and fasting are two of the most spiritual actions that a person can do in order to remain

“spiritual” and Spirit-filled. Prayer, fasting, meditation, thinking; and honestly, just being God-like, these are the things Jesus would do in His mission and time as God on earth.

- Jesus is The Savior of the World; He is the lover and creator of all human beings. Being among the nomadic groups who were not civilized enough to record His very actions [or that any such recordings are yet undiscovered], did not keep Jesus from doing anything different with the wandering sheep-like people alone and by Himself; than He would do with the herds of people He shepherded with His disciples.

- Jesus is the Creator and He is God to all of creation. He is the good shepherd and ruler to all the animals in creation. Therefore, He would spend great amounts of time communing, interacting and even playing with the animals. There are not a lot of animals who can write or speak to tell the story of the time that The Creator spent with His animal creation.

- It is recorded that Jesus worked as a carpenter. And Jesus would have been no ordinary carpenter. To begin, Jesus was the Creator of the Universe, so He certainly could create anything, and it would be a masterpiece. Jesus was also The Master, so He would be the master builder as well. Jesus worked to create the Universe and save mankind from sin, so He was a worker like none other. Jesus was a carpenter, but His life was truly about creating, mastering, and building relationships with man.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—5. When Jesus Became a Member of the Human Race

†

“I AM GOD...”

Romans 1:16-17

The Just Live by Faith

¹⁶For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ, for it is the power of God to salvation for everyone who believes, for the Jew first and also for the Greek. ¹⁷For in it the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith; as it is written, “The just shall live by faith.”

Mark my words...

God is Spirit. He knew once Adam, a man, sinned; He would have to become a man, and cross-over into this human race to save our created holy relationship with Him. He chose the Jewish race to enter into humanity, as the Messiah, to save the human race.

In other words...

People, being people, think about race more than faith. For God, it's only the “human” race—and it's our faith that saves.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—6. What I Look Like



**“I AM GOD...
I AM JESUS. THIS IS WHAT I LOOK LIKE...”**

Isaiah 53:1-3

The Sin-Bearing Messiah

¹Who has believed our report?

And to whom has the arm of the LORD been revealed?

²For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant,

And as a root out of dry ground.

He has no form or comeliness;

And when we see Him,

There is no beauty that we should desire Him.

³He is despised and rejected by men,

A Man of sorrows and acquainted with grief.

And we hid, as it were, our faces from Him;

He was despised, and we did not esteem Him.

Mark my words...

In the Bible, if you read about some of the most well-known men and even women of God, you may often read record of their great physical beauty. First of all, imagine Adam as being the most perfectly created of all human beings possible. And then think of men like King David, or Samson, who were the prototypes of great, godly, and good-looking men. And in the case of women, Eve was the perfectly created woman before sin entered her life. And then there were women like Bathsheba or Delilah, who are described as being beautiful and sexy.

The fact is, when looking at Jesus; His appearance is only prophetically noted by Isaiah. And just like the saying “if you can’t say something nice about someone, don’t say anything at all”; not even those who had seen Him in His day were, in a sense, willing to write anything unflattering about Him. The cold, hard fact remains that since Jesus was not talked about, nor

was His appearance recorded; means He was considered anything but beautiful. The prophet describes Jesus as having no “form” or “comeliness.” He had no “form,” meaning a poor body or physical shape; and no “comeliness,” which means He was unattractive.

In fact, knowing how God operates and the way man usually errors in understanding God by portraying Jesus as a sparkling-eyed, long-haired, handsome man; to keep in step with the way God works, Jesus would understandably clearly not be well-built or handsome. As well, if you were going to create someone who the poor, sick and lowly could identify with; those people would better respond to someone who was not considered handsome or beautiful; but would appear as their own kind.

In other words...

In addition, when you bear the sins of the world on your shoulders and in your heart, naturally, it will take a toll on you and your appearance. And while it is true that Jesus was the strongest and most powerful man ever created on the planet, He was also the weakest. He was strong because He was God; and weak, because He was an identical reflection of sinful and imperfect man.

In fact, He is said to have no physical or outward beauty and would generally be considered undesirable; so much so, that Isaiah later notes that people “hid” from Him; in all likelihood, the identical way people will turn away from a maimed, scarred, deformed or unattractive person. The truth of the matter is: Jesus was “ugly.”

My last words...

In the creation of God, by God, is Jesus the Christ; but through the “ugliness” was great, seemingly unreal, unimaginable, and unbelievable beauty. God, in His wisdom, knew there would be such a contrast between His outward appearance and the beauty that shown from within; man would have had little choice and would have had to believe that God was at work in and through the person of Jesus Christ.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—7. Why Did Jesus Die?



**“I AM GOD...
JESUS GOT THE HELL BEAT OF HIM
SO YOU DID NOT HAVE TO.”**

Isaiah 52:14

**¹⁴Just as many were astonished at you,
So His visage was marred more than any man,
And His form more than the sons of men;**

Mark my words...

As spoken and noted, Jesus Christ had “the Hell beat of Him.” And unlike the film, “The Passion of the Christ”; in truth, everything was more horrific. Jesus, at time of death, was literally “beaten to a pulp.” In fact, He was unrecognizable as a human being. Not only was He unidentifiable as the man, Jesus, the son of Mary and Joseph; but He was unrecognizable as a human being and was more like a slab of human or animal carcass up there on the cross. Remember, this is the strongest, most enduring and sustaining human being ever created facing the most violent and painful beating ever sustained.

Mark 15:44

⁴⁴Pilate marveled that He was already dead; and summoning the centurion, he asked him if He had been dead for some time.

In fact, Pontius Pilate pointed out how surprised he was that after three-or-so hours, Jesus appeared to die sooner than most. What Pilate did not recognize or understand was the nature of the beating, destruction, and death Satan, through man, was inflicting on Jesus. Imagine the utmost and worst of all the hateful, evil punishment and pain placed on a man. Truth be told Jesus Christ was the strongest, most powerful human being ever to endure a crucifixion; yet weigh that against the fact that He was beaten to death and crucified more hatefully, sinfully, evilly and sacrificially than anyone ever before or after Him.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—8. Who Killed Jesus?



**“I AM GOD...
JESUS LET HIMSELF BE KILLED.
JEWISH PRIESTS AND TEACHERS KILLED JESUS.
JEWISH PEOPLE KILLED JESUS.
GENTILES KILLED JESUS.
PAGANS KILLED JESUS.
NON-BELIEVERS KILLED JESUS.
ROMANS KILLED JESUS.
HIS OWN DISCIPLES KILLED JESUS.
CHRISTIANS KILLED JESUS.
NON-CHRISTIANS KILLED JESUS.
YOU KILLED JESUS.
THE WRITER KILLED JESUS.
I LET JESUS BE KILLED ...I AM GOD.”**

Mark my words...

Q: Who killed Jesus? Did the Jews kill Jesus or did sinful man?

The answer is both. The Jews killed Jesus because He said He was God: a blasphemy punishable by death. As well, the Jewish people killed Jesus because Jesus claimed to be the Messiah. However, it was also sinful man, Jews, Gentiles, Greeks, Christians at the time, and “Christians to be” that killed Jesus.

In other words...

The two things that need to be most understood, followed, and adhered to are: Jesus' death by his own culture and bloodline exemplifies Jesus' teaching and the way of God that when a man of God enters this sinful world—that man, and all man, cannot exist in that sinful world and in God's world. From God's perspective, it is only natural that the Son of Man be put to death

by his own kind. In addition, while all of man “kills” Jesus daily; the fact remains that all thoughts, discussions, or offences are eternally secondary to the resurrection and victory God provides by a person’s belief in Jesus Christ as God, and His being raised from the dead.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—9. What Did Jesus Do When He Died?

†

**“I AM GOD...
SIN WAS ERASED AND MAN LIFTED UP BY JESUS.”**

Mark my words...

Jesus promised the most impossible act known to man—He rose from the dead. He told the truth, and He did it. Therefore, we can believe in Him and everything He's said and done.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS—Jesus Christ's Top 10 List—10. How Is The Life of Jesus?

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

In CHAPTER: Life, VERSION: I Am—God says:

Jesus Christ created life.

Jesus Christ lived life.

Jesus Christ said: “I am the life.”

Jesus Christ gave His life.

Jesus Christ saved life.

Jesus Christ is life.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LISTS— School List: Top 10 Cool Things to Know or Do

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Children, these are the top 10 cool things to know or do—”

In other words...

10 Cool Things to Know or Do

10. It's cool if other people have more or better things than me—and it's really cool to be happy for the friends they have and who they know.
9. It's cool to tell the truth—and it's really cool, right or wrong, if I always tell what really happens.
8. It's cool not to take things that don't belong to me—and it's really cool to know; if it's not mine, then it must be somebody else's, and to just leave it alone.
7. It's cool to wait till I'm older and get married before I make-out with someone—and it's really cool, when that time comes, to just make-out with one person.
6. It's cool not to use guns and hurt people, or babies, or animals—and it's really cool to just let things live.

5. It's cool to love my dad and mom—and it's really cool to do the good things they ask me to do.
4. It's cool to work a lot all week—and it's really cool, at the end of the week, to go to church and say lots of prayers to God.
3. It's cool not use swear words—and it's really cool not to call God bad names or say bad things about God.
2. It's cool to make God my hero—and it's really cool to make God my main man and put Him at the top of my list.
1. God is cool—God is really cool.

The Coolest Things to Remember

FIRST: God is cool and He really loves me....SECOND: Other people are cool and it's really cool to love them too!

In other words...

You all be cool now! Peace!

CHAPTER: Accept Jesus
VERSION: Public Acceptance of Christ



**“I AM GOD...
JESUS CALLS ALL MEN TO HIMSELF.”**

Luke 9:26

²⁶For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words, of him the Son of Man will be ashamed when He comes in His own glory, and in His Father’s, and of the holy angels.

Mark my words...

Jesus called all His disciples publicly. He, Himself, was baptized publicly. Jesus also calls all men to Himself publicly [as oft mentioned by Billy Graham]. He said, if you renounce me publicly, if you’re ashamed of me publicly, I will not mention you before the Father. What are the reasons?

In other words...

Jesus was a man—we need to identify ourselves as men and before men. To confirm the fact that Jesus was God in the “presence” of a man.

My last words...

Most importantly and meaningfully; He, Jesus, did this because He, the lover of all; knew that Satan is in the world, among the people, wanting to defeat the work of God and deny the existence of Jesus. In faith and obedience, we need to do what Jesus, in love, wants us to do and wants to do for us.

CHAPTER: Addiction

VERSION: The Evil

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

The Evil

I'm a compulsive addict.

My addictions, I believe, are only a symptom of self-destruction. After I do something evil, I often feel intense pain; physical, mental, and emotional. I entertain many thoughts, serious thoughts, about suicide.

After my sin, I hate myself so much; I wish I were indeed dead. I feel I have absolutely no one to talk to, but for Jesus [at times], that would understand all [both good and evil] that I'm experiencing. I feel like the loneliest person on the face of the earth. I have no idea how to stop. My body is wasting away physically.

The Transition

The loneliness is only magnified by the facts of what I believe I know; and who I am, even in a good sense. For example:

The Good

I have written a book and movie that should win the Academy Award® and will save countless lives. It is God's direct words and story on the meaning and value of life. He allowed me the blessing to work with Him while He created it.

I saw the fireball; I believe the foreshadowing of the bombing on 9-11-01, in my dreams 2 weeks earlier. The event of 9-11-01 was prophetic in relation to the story and revelations dramatized in advance of that event, in the aforementioned creation: "The Archangel."

God has given me the idea for what will be one of, if not, the largest ministry in the world. He has put me in direct line with the personal place of John the Baptist.

I believe God has revealed to me the Antichrist. And I believe He has shown me how the end of the world will come to be. As well as, perhaps the creation of the new earth.

The End

I have felt the presence of Satan and the Holy Spirit on so many gigantic levels and occasions—more importantly, from minute-to-minute and even second-to-second. One minute I am lost—one minute I am saved. These ups and downs, over 40+ years, have weighed me down greatly and I believe the end of my life draws very near.

The combination of the good and evil and my knowing both but not being able to fully express both—in conjunction with searching for persons to share these thoughts and works with has left me both completely isolated and/or completely dependent on Jesus alone. A list, abbreviated, of all to whom I wish to speak includes [all of whom would not understand or even help, are]: Dr. Charles Stanley, Fr. Ralph DiOrion, Rev. Billy Graham, the Pope, Benny Hinn, Paul Crouch, Matt Crouch, Steven Spielberg, the President, my father, and my Aunt Helen. Yet, there is no one who could understand all I know.

CHAPTER: *Addiction*

VERSION: *"God is the Most High"—Jesse Duplantis*

†

**"I AM GOD...
THE MOST HIGH GOD."**

Psalm 9:1-2

¹I will praise You, O LORD, with my whole heart;
I will tell of all Your marvelous works.
²I will be glad and rejoice in You;
I will sing praise to Your name, O Most High.

Psalm 91:8-10

⁸Only with your eyes shall you look,
And see the reward of the wicked.

⁹Because you have made the LORD, who is my refuge,
Even the Most High, your dwelling place,
¹⁰No evil shall befall you,
Nor shall any plague come near your dwelling;

Daniel 4:2

I thought it good to declare the signs and wonders that the Most High
God has worked for me.

Mark 5:1-8

¹Then they came to the other side of the sea, to the country of the
Gadarenes. ²And when He had come out of the boat, immediately there
met Him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, ³who had his
dwelling among the tombs; and no one could bind him, not even with
chains, ⁴because he had often been bound with shackles and chains. And

the chains had been pulled apart by him, and the shackles broken in pieces; neither could anyone tame him. ⁵And always, night and day, he was in the mountains and in the tombs, crying out and cutting himself with stones.

⁶When he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and worshiped Him. ⁷And he cried out with a loud voice and said, “What have I to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God that You do not torment me.”

⁸For He said to him, “Come out of the man, unclean spirit!”

Mark my words...

The best “high” I’ve had in a spiritual sense—might be fasting on a Sabbath day and praying in church combined.

CHAPTER: Adversity
VERSION: It's No Wonder...

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

A 17-year-old is sentenced to 35 years-to-life for a gang killing. God allows adversity [in this case the adversity is the sin-plagued life and/or action of the sinning criminal] so that we may repent [even the sins before this crime] and come to Him. For some, He makes it easy—for others [your trials] are more difficult. But the best thing we can do is use our own free-will and come to know Him now, without such heartache in our lives.

In other words...

In this case or scenario, God also allows adversity to beset or attack the victim of a sin or crime. Either the victim was sinning themselves and got caught up in a sinful situation whereby there is no protection, blessing, or holiness; or the victim, God knows, would not have reacted properly and in a godly way when it came to forgiving the sinning criminal should the victim not had died [please see CHAPTER: Forgiveness]. Lastly, keep in mind, it may well have been that the victim was merely a sacrificial offering because, in a sense, “bad things do happen to good people.” In the end, God knows that the victim’s death will bring about a greater goodness for all of mankind.

CHAPTER: *Angels*

VERSION: *“Angelic messages or the Holy Spirit speaking?”*

†

**“I AM GOD...
ANGELS ARE SUPERNATURAL
WORKING OUTSIDE OF MAN IN THE NATURAL—
THE HOLY SPIRIT IS WORKING INSIDE THE NATURAL
MAN TO DO THE SUPERNATURAL.”**

Mark my words...

Angelic messages come from the outside of a person—the Holy Spirit speaks from within.

In other words...

I will write three true stories of encounters with God, His angels and their messages. One story occurred when I was in a “neutral,” northeastern state; another while I was in a “sinful,” southern state; and a final, when I was in a “wholehearted,” western state.

Neutral

I recall what I never knew may have been my first experience with an angel. As I look back, I now know that it truly was an angel that saved me from injury or death.

I was a teenager driving a dune buggy on the winding, dirt, back roads of the woods behind my family home. I knew the trails well and as weeks went by, I would gradually increase the speed in which I traveled; as I became more accustomed to the layout of the road, and more used to the fact that I had only once or twice in months seen only a motorcycle on those narrow, one-way roads.

On this day, I was only going one-way as I sped up to the blind grade or hill that I had ridden over time and time before. At the instant I reached top speed and was at the peak of the mound, a pick-up truck traveling at a slightly faster speed than me instantly faced me head on. My

only reaction was an “instinct” or “reflex” to turn sharply to the right. And thank God I did, because he too quickly swerved to his right, thus we passed within inches of each other.

To this day, I can still sense that there was a voice or “thought” in my head that “told me,” and seemed to guide my hand, to turn in the direction that would spare me from danger or save my life.

I know that it was in fact an angel who protected me and helped me, because that is what angels do—not only help and protect but point us in the “right” direction.

I will call this my “neutral” experience with angels and angelic messages, as I was neither doing good in serving mankind, nor was I committing a sinful act.

Sinful

This story of angelic intervention and protection occurred when I was being tempted and trapped in a sinful situation.

I had just landed at the Miami International Airport and was waiting in the lost baggage line, when a dazzling woman approached me and began flirting and adulterously speaking with me. I accepted her offer for physical interaction right outside the terminal under a secluded area of the arrival zone. As she and I consummated a sinful act, and I in turn, attempted to sin against her by reaching my hand into her open pocketbook and grabbing the exposed dollar bills that I saw; however, before I could do so, she suggested I walk her to her car. At that point, she could have asked me to escort her anywhere and I would have.

As we walked to the stairs and ramps leading down to the parking garage, I distinctly heard a thoughtful voice say, “Don’t go.” Now, I knew the voice wasn’t the devil’s because he would have desired that I continue in sinful and adulterous acts with the woman. But I also knew it wasn’t God or the Holy Spirit saying [although He would have] “Don’t go”; so I would resist the sins—because honestly, I was more than willing to disobey God; and His voice, I was prepared not to listen to or respond to anyway. But this “urging” or message I did listen to because it seemed more about my protection rather than sinfulness. As she began to lead me down the darkened stairwell of the parking garage, I stopped and hurriedly walked onward. Thank God I did, because there were two or three of her large and menacing accomplices prepared to strike me, rob me, or kill me.

Wholehearted

In service to God, my Creator, I retreated to the nearby mountains in Newport Beach, California with little more than writing instruments, paper, and The Scriptures. I was on a mission to write a story that had come to me in a dream a short time earlier. At that secluded place, in this miraculous state, I wrote in creative union with God. Doing my insignificant best to experience forty days in the life of Jesus, I prayed and fasted. I spoke to no earthly soul. I communed only with spirits, angels and nature. In sights and visions that were almost beyond belief, I was greatly tempted and saw the devil. In various signs and dreams, I believe I was visited by angels and spoken to by Jesus. These were the greatest forty days of my life.

To begin, the angel stories I am writing in this chapter cannot together compare to this story I am about to write. One day, on or about the 20th day of my time virtually secluded on this bluff; I had, as it was customary, seen some people walking with one another or accompanied by their dogs. Still, I spoke to no one and kept to myself. As I overlooked the watery outlet below, I noticed a priest standing motionless, with great intent, looking remarkably intense out over the downslide. For a couple of minutes, I noticed him; he too, spoke to no one. In fact, he did not even turn his head backward to look at anyone on the top side. Those were the only moments I noticed him. In fact, I had to think back to recall those as his appearance there seemed rather imbedded in my subconscious and less like a distinct memory.

About ten days later, on or about the 30th day on the mountaintop, my Spirit was worn, and my emotions were very low. I was tired and at a crossroads with the writing. In fact, I had even considered retreating and leaving the woods to return back to the world; but I could not. It was out of the question. I was committed to serving my time up there, alone with The Lord. But that day, I was not alone. Again, in the late afternoon, as a few people strolled about, I saw that priest again. He was standing in about the same area I had seen him before. This time, I noticed he had a yellow, legal notepad. Again, he seemed most intent on whatever he was thinking. I even recall him making a note, and that seemed strange in and of itself, as he seemed to be thinking about writing on the pad without using a writing instrument. This day, I spent a longer time observing him as he seemed to be in a world all his own. In fact, not only did he not appear to pay attention to any of the handful of people there, but none of the people seemed to pay a bit of attention to him either; strange, I thought. Still, he really caught my eye. For some reason, I didn't mentally will that he make eye contact with me. For one, I didn't think it would work; he was too focused. Secondly, I did not want to disturb him as he looked like he was enjoying some peace and quiet. And finally, I was a little afraid to look at him eye-to-eye for reasons, to this day, I can't entirely explain. Finally, like a moment of thought that tends to blend into a memory, I turned my attention to something else, and I did not see him any longer.

Now, enough about people; to this point, the most amazing angelic intervention I experienced had to be with about three days remaining on my spiritual retreat mission. I was sitting on a rock with my notes and Bible perched on a tree stump, trying to think and meditate on what God had wanted me to write next in my angel story. However, my writing had come to a real standstill. My mind was fatigued, my frustration was at its peak, and I was completely uncertain if I could get done by day forty. Truthfully, I really wondered if all my time there writing, meditating and praying was worth it or would be worth it even if I did finish my journalistic journey.

After an agonizing hour, I had prayed and cried out to God to send me a sign that He was with me; that what I was doing was His will and that I was worthy as a person to do it. I don't believe I could have felt so alone as at that moment. Not only had I not seen my animal friends; the squirrels [who I lovingly named "Angel," "Red," and "The Other Guy"], but the field mouse who ate off of my feet had not been around; nor was the hummingbird, the hawk, the rabbit, and not even some human creatures. I was really alone, both physically and mentally. It was in that moment, that I saw the most amazing thing....

Like a gentle breeze that touched me, I felt a presence. I felt I was not alone. I anticipated an arrival of some sort. Suddenly, I felt compelled to look to my left. There, on the fallen tree branch that I had previously used to dry my rain-soaked clothing, I saw a beautiful brown squirrel make his way to the center of the limb. He seemed to perfectly take a place standing directly in the center. Now, when I write "standing" I mean standing. Much to my belief [not disbelief] he rose to his hind legs, curled his forefeet to his chest and seemed to mightily, lovingly, protectively, and encouragingly, guard over me and accompany me. Not only did I sense he was there for me, but he seemed to have dominion over the entire area.

Almost immediately, my mind seemed to gain thought-filled momentum, and my writing seemed to really take off. Every thought I tried to grasp came to me. In addition, my nature was completely at rest; even enlightened, invigorated and rejuvenated. It did not take long for me know that while that "squirrel" stood there, he was, in fact, not a squirrel at all. Unless, that is, squirrels can stand completely still on their hind legs, for six straight hours!

And so came daybreak of day 40; I had completed the writing I needed to do the evening before. As I sat thinking on the rock; I intended to pack-up my belongings, say some prayers, meditate, and say, "thank you" and "goodbye" to God and the many angels and animals I had come in touch with there. I could hardly believe that God had to bring me there and put me through so much, good and bad, to write an angelic story about angels. More so, I was thankful, blessed, and in oneness with my Lord, Jesus Christ by having experienced my own forty days of prayer, fasting, and satanic temptation. What a once-in-an-eternity [not lifetime] experience this had been. Then, through the opening of the enclave I had inhabited, I saw the priest walk so

undauntedly by, he seemed to gallop. Immediately, I had an urge to follow him. Not only was I seemingly prompted to do so, but out of sheer curiosity, I wanted to find out “what his story was.”

In a few long-legged leaps, I broke through the palm trees and brush to the open area of the acreage to encounter him. However, to my complete amazement and disbelief, he was nowhere to be found. I glanced over the entire area, but he was not down the dirt road, nor did he plummet or fall off of the cliff; and he was not in the bushes. Suddenly, I had to struggle to look more closely for him. He was gone. He disappeared. Just as I had lost sight of him, my struggle intensified as I became an emotional cripple thinking I was losing my mind. I became deathly afraid that something was wrong with me. I could not stand and fell flat on my face in the dirt. It seemed I had to wrestle with some “force” or “being” that was keeping me still and calming me down. I was frightened, weakened, and perplexed. I cried madly, rolling in the dirt and grass field. I shouted out to God as loudly in my mind as I actually vocalized. For many, many minutes I asked him: “God, what is happening to me?” I pleaded with Him to help me and save me. Not that I was in danger or even besieged by the fear, it just seemed as if I was being molded into earthen clay so that a Creator could speak to me or carve me into an image. This went on excruciatingly and unrelentingly for two or more hours.

I must have rolled tens of yards to a point below an old, weathered telegraph or telephone pole that looked just like a crucifix. At that moment, I received the information I was looking for and a revelation I had forgotten. The news I heard God send to my mind, enlightened me instantly. The “priest” that had been there those three days, had likely been there all forty; however, I only got to see him when God knew I needed to see him. And in fact, that “priest” has been with me all my life. My God told me, that “priest”; that angel, which came looking like a “priest”; is my guardian angel.

Moments after the comfort, peace, and understanding I received from that knowledge set-in; I had the other issue to deal with of how I was going to physically stand up, as virtually all my energy was drained from me. In addition, I comprehended the feelings and heartfelt change that seemed to all-of-a-sudden catch up to me in the moments I lay flat beneath that “cross.” And that was when The Lord God revealed and reminded of the true point, His point, to my being up there. It was not to write the book, or to discover my guardian angel [who, by the way, when I see again, I know I will be dead or dying]; but the true-life experience I had in an infinitesimal part [as much as a sinful, ungodly human being possibly can], whereby I almost absolutely and completely felt completely Christ-like—the same way, my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ did, as was recorded in the Holy Scriptures in the days and years following His 40 days and nights of meditation and oneness; temptation and loneliness. There could have been no greater experience in my life, than to live the life my Creator did when He came to earth in the creation of Himself, as Jesus the Christ.

CHAPTER: Angels

VERSION: Angels Appearing as Animals?

†

“I AM GOD... YES.”

Mark my words...

Not only have I seen it but read the Bible—Satan is a “fallen” angel. And he appeared to Eve as a snake.

In other words...

On the cliff top, one day, I had been reading about the experiences that Daniel, Jacob, and other men had experienced when it came to their contact with angels. It was a great comfort and confirmation for me to know I was not alone in my experiences, and that I had actually seen God’s created beings and messengers, the angels.

At one point, I rose from my seated position to get a different perspective as I felt my mind bogging or slowing down. I had reclined against a tree and decided to open Scripture and read, when I had a feeling that something strange and unknown was going on; and that God was whispering to me that Satan was extremely angry at the work I was doing. Yet, I could not be in a more secure position with my Bible in hand; and so I sat and began to turn the pages. It was only a moment before my concerns had passed, and I sat comfortably reading and thinking about the verses I read. I turned page after page and read silently to myself. Oh my God!

Oh my God! Oh my God! There, between the pages, was a creature like no other I had ever seen; and when I saw it, I experienced the greatest fear I had ever known. I felt if I read any more of that Bible, I was going to be in grave danger. I was terrified and actually felt as if I was going to die.

This creature was a bug; but no ordinary bug, and once I looked at it and realized that there was no earthly way it could get in between the pages of my Bible, I knew it was the devil himself. Now, I have read and studied that the devil appears as an angel of light; and that he is often temptingly beautiful but let me inform and instruct you—not always. This living creature was Satan; and it was the most unreal, unimaginable, frightening, hateful, murderous, and evil being that one could ever see.

This bug, this insect or animal, was about 3-4 inches in length. Its head and body were clear, transparent and translucent [which means it emits light]. I could see its blue and red, with some green veins with a blood and water-like fluid flowing. I mean, it could have actually been a bug, I thought again, but I had never seen anything look like this. Secondly, there is no way it could remain alive when I closed the Bible the night before and live between those tightly compressed pages. Thirdly, its face did not frighten me the way an insect or bug might, or more so, a snake in the grass [since I loved all animal creation and had been sleeping with them for close to 40 days]; but this animal's face gave me feelings of an internal nature that led me to believe this creature had the power to do anything it wanted. And lastly, it would not fly away; and God be with me, when I prayed to God that it departs from me, it vanished! So watch out, Satan is a deceiver. And if anyone tells you he only appears as a beautiful angelic being [although most times he does], and not as a hideous, ugly, evil-looking creature or animal; they are lying to you. They are representing Satan. Beware! Now you know.

CHAPTER: Anger

VERSION: Anger Management—Positive Anger

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark 11:15-19 {Matthew 21: 12-17, John 2:13-22}

Jesus Cleanses the Temple

¹⁵So they came to Jerusalem. Then Jesus went into the temple and began to drive out those who bought and sold in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money changers and the seats of those who sold doves.

¹⁶And He would not allow anyone to carry wares through the temple.

¹⁷Then He taught, saying to them, “Is it not written, “My house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations”? But you have made it a “den of thieves.”

¹⁸And the scribes and chief priests heard it and sought how they might destroy Him; for they feared Him, because all the people were astonished at His teaching. ¹⁹When evening had come, He went out of the city.

Mark my words...

When Jesus was most angry—as He overturned of the tables of the temple—still, He didn’t kill or order the death of anyone.

CHAPTER: Anger

VERSION: Anger Management—Positive to Negative Anger

†

“I AM GOD...”

Ephesians 4:26-27

²⁶“Be angry, and do not sin”: do not let the sun go down on your wrath,
²⁷nor give place to the devil.

Mark my words...

The Apostle Paul, repeating the words of the Psalmist (Psalm 4:4), also, basically said: If you are going to be godly angry that is understandable, but do not be sinful. Do not be sinfully or ungodly angry, because that type of anger will lead to murder.

CHAPTER: Anger

VERSION: Anger Management—Negative Anger

†

“I AM GOD...”

Matthew 5:21

Murder Begins in the Heart

²¹“You have heard that it was said to those of old, “You shall not murder, and whoever murders will be in danger of the judgment.’ ²²But I say to you that whoever is angry with his brother shall be in danger of the judgment. And whoever says to his brother, “Raca!’ shall be in danger of the council. But whoever says, “You fool!’ shall be in danger of hell fire.

Mark my words...

Jesus basically said: “If you are angry—settle it—put an end to it.” He knows anger leads to killing.



**“I AM GOD...
I AM MAD AT YOU.”**

Mark my words...

I am mad. I have lived my life relatively free from anger. I have found anger to be a negative and destructive human emotion. For the most part, anger leads to sin. I have lived with the instruction to “turn the other cheek”; which, in a sense, is the opposition to being angry. To live life in a loving and forgiving way is certainly the way of The Lord.

One day, I distinctly recall allowing myself to respond in anger to a situation. The results were devastating. It was no different than an alcoholic taking a first drink: I was a sinner committing a new sin. And the Satanic trap that I fell into has been snaring and capturing me ever since. I have had to daily combat the emotion of anger; as it truly is self-destructive. However, in combating and trying to spiritually understand anger, I sought out the mind of Christ to learn a righteous and Christ-like anger.

In other words...

There is a godly and righteous anger. And likely, the most well-known recorded incident of godly anger in the Bible was when Jesus “overturned the tables of the moneychangers.”

In addition to being “angry,” God has often shown Himself to be a God of “wrath.” As well as Jesus turning over the tables of the moneychangers; God is greatly angered by war, injustice, hatred, and all forms of sin and evil. I, myself, when filled with the Holy Spirit; have experienced the often times, intense anger at such things when “the love of Christ had reached its end.” And when “the love of Christ had reached its end”; the next step is death. The death Jesus Christ suffered for man’s sins is the final resting place before God’s “anger” and “wrath” are justly unleashed to combat the hatred, destruction, and sin that rules this life.

CHAPTER: Animals

VERSION: Animals Are People Too!



**“I AM GOD...
I CREATED THE ANIMAL KINGDOM.
THE ANIMALS ARE MY CREATION.”**

Mark 16:15

¹⁵And He said to them, “Go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature.”

Mark my words...

If you read the Scripture verse above spoken by The Lord God Himself, note that Jesus Christ, the Creator, said preach the Gospel to every “creature.” Jesus did not just say preach the Gospel to: “every man or person.” But the Christ chose to say, “every creature.” WWJD: What was Jesus doing? It simply means Jesus was including the animals in the command to preach the Gospel to every “creature.”

Saint Francis of Assisi, the Catholic Saint, once said: “At all times preach the Gospel...and if necessary, use words.” This man of God was saying to preach the Gospel is to live the Gospel. Simply, let your actions speak louder than your words. St. Francis is also the man whom you see pictured or symbolized in the presence of and often holding many in God’s animal kingdom.

Francis of Assisi, who understood preaching the Gospel to be more than speaking the Gospel, knew what Jesus meant by His words. He preached and lived the Gospel by knowing the Gospel of Jesus Christ was a life of loving and not killing any and every creature.

In other words...

Francis knew to love the animal kingdom meant to not kill his friends, the animals. It is no wonder the animals loved Francis and loved having their picture painted with him.

CHAPTER: *Animals*

VERSION: *Animals Have Families Too!*

†

**“I AM GOD...
HAVE YOU SEEN MY ANIMALS
AS THEY LOOK THROUGH THEIR EYES
AT ONE ANOTHER?
HAVE YOU HEARD MY ANIMALS
AS THEY SPEAK TO ONE ANOTHER?
HAVE YOU SMELLED MY ANIMALS
AS THEY SMELL ONE ANOTHER?
HAVE YOU TOUCHED MY ANIMALS
AS THEY TOUCHED ONE ANOTHER?
HAVE YOU EATEN THE SAME FRUITS, NUTS,
VEGETABLES AND GRAINS AS THEY HAVE.
HAVE YOU NOT WITNESSED ME PROVIDE FOOD,
CLOTHING AND SHELTER FOR THEM?
HAVE I NOT CREATED THEM AS A FAMILY?
WHY, THEN, DO YOU KILL MY CREATION?”**

Mark my words...

An animal has inbred, created instincts and is smart enough to know the parents who gave birth to them.

CHAPTER: *Animals*

VERSION: *Spay...Neuter...Geld....*

†

**“I AM GOD...
WHO ON EARTH GAVE YOU PERMISSION
TO BREAK ONE OF MY FIRST BIBLICAL COMMANDMENTS:
BE FRUITFUL AND MULTIPLY?”**

**“I AM GOD...
CATS, DOGS, HORSES—
DO NOT DISALLOW THEIR REPRODUCING—
IT ONLY COMES NATURALLY AS I COMMANDED...
AND FOR PEOPLE AS WELL.”**

Genesis 1:22

²²**And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth.**

Mark my words...

“And let fowl multiply...” God did not say kill them and keep them from doing so.

Genesis 1:28

²⁸**And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.**

In other words...

Yes...to all creation...“be fruitful and multiply”...and in having “dominion,” let the animal kingdom do the same.

CHAPTER: *Animals*

VERSION: *Separate Puppies, Kittens, and Foals at Birth from Their Natural Parents?*

†

**“I AM GOD...
GOD FORBID.”**

Mark my words...

Human beings need to have more responsibility and accountability. If you want to control the animal population; do so, by allowing them to “stay married” [God boarded them two-by-two, male and female]; in order to become and to stay a family.

CHAPTER: *Animals*

VERSION: *Zoo's....*

†

**“I AM GOD...
HOW WOULD YOU FEEL IF AN ANIMAL
PUT YOU IN A CAGE JUST TO ADMIRE YOU?”**

Genesis 1:26

²⁶Then God said, “Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.”

Genesis 1:28

²⁸Then God blessed them, and God said to them, “Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth.”

Mark my words...

Dominion means lordship or being a king or ruler over.

do·min·ion Pronunciation Key (də-mĭn'yən)
n.

1. Control or the exercise of control; sovereignty: “The devil... has their souls in his possession, and under his dominion” (Jonathan Edwards).
2. A territory or sphere of influence or control; a realm.
3. often Dominion *Abbr.* Dom. One of the self-governing nations within the British Commonwealth.
4. dominions *Christianity*. See domination.

In other words...

QUESTION: What kind of king would you be if you could not control yourself and killed or murdered your loyal subjects?

QUESTION: What kind of king would you be if you murdered and killed those you ruled over?

QUESTION: What kind of king would you be if you murdered and killed, and then even ate all those who live in your kingdom?

ANSWER: You'd be a king without dominion.

CHAPTER: *Animals*
VERSION: *Falling Dead....*

†

**“I AM GOD...
ONLY PARTAKE OF THOSE THAT FALL TO THE GROUND.”**

Mark my words...

The Lord God made all of creation to live; creation was not made or intended to die—not plant, or animal, or person. Eventually, after man sinned, death and destruction inhabited the planet. Since the beginning of time, God has been against killing and death. However, in the next step of God’s design, rather than continuing to kill, He would have that the animals that fall to death should then be eaten for food. This is not totally a perfect plan—since there was not supposed to be death in the first place, but it is God “making the best of a bad situation.”

CHAPTER: *Animals*
VERSION: *Animals You Know....*

†

**“I AM GOD...
ANIMALS BECAME CARNIVORES AND CANNIBALS
AFTER THE FALL—AND SO TOO,
WILL YOUR CARNIVOROUS, FALLEN NATURE
RESORT TO CANNIBALISM.”**

Mark my words...

God created animals innocent beings with no enmity between themselves. He created them with no design or desire to kill themselves or one another. The first animal murder or slaughter came after sin, destruction, and murder evilly entered existence.

CHAPTER: *The Antichrist*

VERSION: *The “Abomination of Desolation”*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark 13:14

The Great Tribulation

¹⁴“So when you see the “**abomination of desolation**,’ spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not” (let the reader understand), “then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains.

Abomination

a·bom·i·na·tion Pronunciation Key (ə·bŏm'ə-nā'shən)
n.

1. Abhorrence; disgust.
2. A cause of abhorrence or disgust.

Desolation

des·o·la·tion Pronunciation Key (dĕs'ə-lā'shən, dĕz'-)
n.

1. The act or an instance of desolating.
2. The state of being desolate.
3. Devastation; ruin: *a drought that brought desolation to the region.*
4.
 - a. The state of being abandoned or forsaken; loneliness: *a sense of utter desolation following the death of his parents.*
 - b. Wretchedness; misery.

Mark my words...

I believe this to mean, in the sense of the Antichrist, that the Antichrist is the one whose decision to war causes the great nuclear war that is Armageddon [i.e. the epitome of desolation is this decision].

The Great Tribulation

¹⁴“So when you see the “abomination of desolation,” spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not” (let the reader understand), “then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. ¹⁵Let him who is on the housetop not go down into the house, nor enter to take anything out of his house. ¹⁶And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes. ¹⁷But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! ¹⁸And pray that your flight may not be in winter. ¹⁹For in those days there will be tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the creation which God created until this time, nor ever shall be. ²⁰And unless the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect’s sake, whom He chose, He shortened the days.

²¹“Then if anyone says to you, “Look, here is the Christ!’ or, “Look, He is there!’ do not believe it. ²²For false christs and false prophets will rise and show signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. ²³But take heed; see, I have told you all things beforehand.



“I AM GOD...”

Matthew 16:16

¹⁶Simon Peter answered and said, “You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.”

Mark my words...

The living God does not mean that Jesus, God, is alive today here on earth in person. He once was but is now alive in Spirit.

Matt. 24:23-31

²³“Then if anyone says to you, “Look, here is the Christ!’ or “There!’ do not believe it. ²⁴For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. ²⁵See, I have told you beforehand.

Jesus does not necessarily literally mean: Himself. He is speaking about the Christian belief system.

²⁶“Therefore if they say to you, “Look, He is in the desert!’ do not go out; or “Look, He is in the inner rooms!’ do not believe it. ²⁷For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. ²⁸For wherever the carcass is, there the eagles will be gathered together.

In other words...

Jesus is saying that He will not appear as a human being, rather He will return from Heaven in a spiritual form and resurrected body. Keep in mind, you may see a man, the Antichrist, who “even the elect” [basically those who God has truly enlightened and those who should know

better], who you will think is Jesus. The key to knowing the difference from Christ and the Antichrist is not in their [perhaps] exactly similar appearance, but where they appear from.

The Coming of the Son of Man

²⁹**“Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. ³⁰Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. ³¹And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.**

My last words...

The Antichrist is not the incarnate Satan. Nowhere does Scripture say the devil was, is, or can be a human being. The devil can copy God right up to the point of Jesus. Jesus is what separates good from evil. The Antichrist is more of a Christian in opposition or disobedience to the birth, work, life and death of Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER: *The Antichrist*
VERSION: *The Spirit of Antichrist*



**“I AM GOD...
THE SPIRIT OF ANTICHRIST—
ARE THE DECEPTIVE THOUGHTS, WORDS,
AND ACTIONS THAT GO AGAINST THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST.
THE SPIRIT OF ANTICHRIST INVOLVES DEATH AND
DECEIT; HATRED AND HYPOCRISY.”**

1 John 4:1-6

Love for God and One Another

¹Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world. ²By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God, ³and every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God. And this is the spirit of the Antichrist, which you have heard was coming, and is now already in the world.

⁴You are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because He who is in you is greater than he who is in the world. ⁵They are of the world. Therefore they speak as of the world, and the world hears them.

⁶We are of God. He who knows God hears us; he who is not of God does not hear us. By this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of error.

Mark my words...

The spirit of antichrist can affect a Christian believer—it's the deceptive choice to do against the Holy Spirit.

In other words...

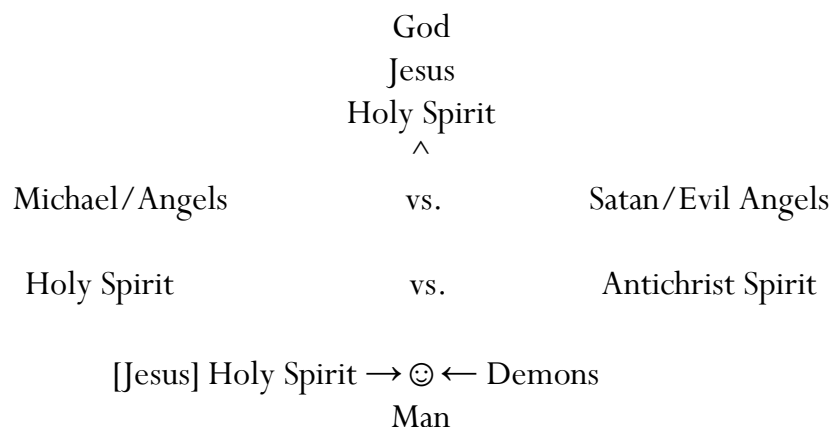
There are a great many examples of the working of the spirit of antichrist. First and foremost, I have to look at myself. Although, at present, I have the Holy Spirit living inside of me, if I repeatedly sin and do not repent, eventually the Holy Spirit will lose His position to a demonic spirit. And once that demonic spirit begins to grow and “harden my heart,” and evil becomes second nature for me; then I will eventually have the spirit of antichrist living inside of me.

I will be an antichrist. And in such a case, while I may have known the Holy Spirit and the power of Jesus in my life, an antichrist will be my true identity. I may lie by speaking like a “Christian,” and at times I may even do a good or godly thing; but truthfully, I am only living in deceit, and I am filled with the antichrist spirit.

Another perfect example would be US Presidents George Bush [and Barack Obama; in fact most US Presidents, “Caesars” past, present and future], and in fact, anyone who repeatedly sins and sins. And in the instance of Mr. Bush, and anyone for that matter, who believes in, endorses, or continually wars and kills another human being; they are certainly possessed with the spirit of antichrist. And furthermore, what is so deceptively worse and is truly the epitome and utmost of a person with an antichrist spirit, is one who calls themselves a “Christian” and repeatedly sins and sins or murders and kills. In fact, killing anyone in the name of Jesus is the spirit of antichrist and its finest definition—and at the moment in time, when the Antichrist makes himself known; killing in the name of Jesus or Christianity will be the breaking point for the return of Jesus Christ to defeat the Antichrist and the spirit of antichrist.

My last words...

I’ve got news for you [and Dr. Stanley, whom I love and revere]—anyone who is not filled with the Holy Spirit—their body is inhabited by demon spirits. Moreover, the spirit of antichrist—that is Satan, is at war in the Heavens against God and God controls His angels and the Holy Spirit. Satan has control of antichrist spirit and demons.



CHAPTER: Anti-Christians

VERSION: Anti-Christians by Definition

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Anti, by definition, means:

anti

\An”ti\ [Gr. ? against. See Ante.] A prefix meaning against, opposite or opposed to, contrary, or in place of; -- used in composition in many English words.

anti- or ant-
pref.

Opposite:
Opposing; against:
Counteracting; neutralizing:
Destroying:

Inverse: Displaying opposite characteristics:

In other words...

Anti-Christians—are not just non-believers—they also include false “Christians.” It is not necessarily a wicked deception of Satan when someone openly rejects Jesus Christ. It is, however, the great deception when a “Christian” denies the true teachings of Jesus.

Often times, this is more than just a matter of demon possession—but a person possessing a “hardened heart” [Old Testament]. It is also a lack of the Holy Spirit [New Testament] and a possible Anti-Christian state-of-being [Revelation].

CHAPTER: Anti-Christians

VERSION: Anti-Christians and World Religions

†

“I AM GOD...”

Matthew 12:30

³⁰He who is not with Me is against Me, and he who does not gather with Me scatters abroad.”

Mark my words...

Jesus, the Son of God, said: “He who is not for me, is against Me.” Essentially, every person who is of another “religion” [Islam, Hinduism, Buddhism, Judaism etc...] is an Anti-Christian.

How many others or “scattered” religions or belief systems are there?...

Agnostic/Atheist	Neo-Paganism
African Traditional & Diasporic	Primal-indigenous
Baha’I	Rastafarianism
Buddhism	Secular/Nonreligious
Cao Dai	Scientology
Chinese traditional religion	Shinto
Confucianism	Sikhism
Hinduism	Spiritism
Islam	Taoism
Jainism	Tenrikyo
Juche	Unitarian-Universalism
Judaism	Zoroastrianism

...And “whatever in Hell” Satan and the misled, misguided and unknowing peoples of the world will think of and choose to believe in next.

My last words...

I know the common desires for all human beings are peace and love. But with so many uncommon “religious” divisions, differences, and definitions of what “love” is—the only way to obtain world peace and love is by belief in one: one “religion,” one vision, one God, one man...Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER: Anti-Christians
VERSION: No Life—No Love

†

**“I AM GOD...
ANTI-CHRISTIANS ARE ANTICHRISTS.
AND ONE ANTICHRIST IS THE ANTICHRIST.”**

CHAPTER: Anti-Christians
VERSION: No Love—No Life

†

**“I AM GOD...
DEPART FROM ME ALL YOU WHO SIN AND DO INIQUITY.**

**MAN CAN DO ALL MIRACLES.
BUT THE SIN THAT KEEPS YOU FROM ME IS:
THE SIN AGAINST KILLING LIFE—
AND THE PARENT OF LIFE:
THE SIN AGAINST LOVE.”**

Mark my words...

Depart from me all you who sin and do iniquity. People can do all miracles, etc. But what is the iniquity that keeps them out of Heaven? — The sin against life; and “the parent of life”— the sin against love.

CHAPTER: Baptism

VERSION: Baptized to Receive Holy Spirit?



“I AM GOD...”

Mark 1:8-9

⁸“I baptize you with water, but he will baptize you with the Holy Spirit.”

The Baptism and Temptation of Jesus

⁹At that time Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee and was baptized by John in the Jordan. ¹⁰As Jesus was coming up out of the water, he saw heaven being torn open and the Spirit descending on him like a dove.

Mark my words...

Do you need to be baptized to be saved? Yes.

Do you need to receive the Holy Spirit to be saved? Yes.

In other words...

However, in the world and in the church today, there is not an effective enough way to receive the Holy Spirit. Many people seek to receive the Holy Spirit of God or receive Him as an added “manifestation” or byproduct, if you will, after receiving a supernatural healing or at a “healing” service. However, much of what is being attributed to the Holy Spirit in the way of divine healing is accomplished through man’s mental capacity. It is true, that a truly divine working by the Holy Spirit can be done and needs to be done to achieve a healing of any kind, but that is only forthrightly or effectively done usually when an individual prays to encounter the Holy Spirit on their own and not through one of the many “healing” preachers, or televangelist ministers, or ministries in the world today. Again, you can be [and can only be healed, not by man] healed by the Holy Spirit and have the Holy Spirit “work on you.” But eternally more important is the question of whether you have actually received the Holy Spirit that leads to eternal salvation?

In addition, it is not uncommon to genuinely receive the Holy Spirit by the invitation to “accept Jesus” at the call of a preacher, minister, priest, or pastor, or another Christian believer. However, He is best received through prayer and a “personal relationship” with Jesus Christ. Yet, the most effective way to truly connect with God the Father and Jesus, and to receive the Holy Spirit; is by first “giving your life” to Christ in your heart and mind and being baptized with the water that John the Baptist spoke of and is recorded in the Holy Bible. This is the way chosen by God the Father with His Son, Jesus.



**“I AM GOD...
YOU NEED TO BE BAPTIZED TO BE SAVED...”**

Mark 16:16

¹⁶He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned.

Mark my words...

This Scripture verse has been misunderstood to both encourage and discourage Baptism as it relates to a person's eternal salvation. Those who believe Baptism leads to salvation read the verse as it is—despite the fact Jesus does not say, if you do not believe and are not baptized you are condemned. And by this wording—or what is not being exactly stated—this passage leads to the very misunderstanding that is being mistaught by people who believe Baptism is unnecessary for salvation.

To begin, think of the consequences of misreading or misinterpreting these words of Jesus. The truth is: a person's eternal life is at stake. In the light of that meaningfulness—let me instruct you on The Spirit-inspired truth.

First of all, there are two Baptisms: one is the Baptism of the Holy Spirit—where, through the cleansing of our sin, through the blood of Jesus—our sinful spirits are made holy and new by the acceptance of Jesus and the filling of our body with His Spirit. The other, is the actual act of a water Baptism. Most notably, water Baptism is done as an act of obedience to a command of God's to identify ourselves as a disciple of Jesus Christ's.

In God's eyes, you cannot have one without the other. In the days of the disciples, in connection with—and immediately upon accepting the Gospel of Jesus and receiving the Holy Spirit [Spirit Baptism]—a person was water baptized. This was done to identify a person as a follower of Christ and to fulfill the command to be baptized given by Christ.

Also, when a person was water baptized, they would, in connection with and immediately thereafter, receive the Holy Spirit. The perfect example of this is Jesus Himself, who, when baptized to “fulfill all righteousness” [to do what is right in God’s sight], had the Holy Spirit descend upon Him.

Therefore, in both cases or in whatever “order,” if you will; Jesus is commanding us to be baptized for salvation. If a Spirit-baptism comes first, the “proof of the truth” will be the following water Baptism. If a water-baptism comes first, then the truth is you will receive the Holy Spirit. In God’s eyes, you cannot have one without the other—Spirit Baptism and water-baptism go hand-in-hand.

*Now, and especially in interpreting the context of the Scripture verse—“**...He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned.**”—and what it does not say... The Lord did not need to say, “And he who does not believe and is not baptized will be condemned.” Because in God’s eye’s, in Jesus’ words, He knew what He meant.*

In other words...

If you had a terminal illness and you were told you were going to die, yet there was one doctor in the world who said he had created a watery drink that could save your life... for you to want to take that drink, in order to save your life—you would first have to believe that the doctor knew what he was talking about. Then, if you believed the doctor—you would drink the drink. If you believe in the doctor and drink the drink—your life will be saved. If you do not believe in the doctor, you will not drink the drink. If you do not believe—you do not drink—and if you do not drink, you will die.

CHAPTER: Baptism

VERSION: The Parent's Role in a Catholic Christian's Baptism



**“I AM GOD...
IT IS THE RESPONSIBILITY OF THE PARENTS,
IN CHOOSING TO BIRTH A CHILD—
THAT MY CHILD BE BAPTIZED.”**

Mark my words...

Catholic Christians “weren’t far off” in understanding the importance of Baptism to “save the soul” by instructing and insisting on infant Baptism. Yet, the Protestant Christians were correct in assessing that Baptism needs to be an “adult” Baptism made by conscious choice. In God’s eyes an infant Baptism is meaningless. Yet, at birth, the child is “baptized” [with an “adult Baptism”] if the adult parents have been [“adult”] baptized. Later, at the calling of The Lord, the infant or child is commanded and instructed to make a personal decision to accept Christ and themselves be baptized.

In other words...

If two “un-baptized” parents choose to have a child—then that child is susceptible, from birth, to dying into eternal damnation [in the time leading up to the child’s personal choice to be baptized into receiving the Holy Spirit]. That is the “God’s honest truth.”

CHAPTER: *Beliefs*

VERSION: *Ask Yourself... Who Do You Believe?*

†

**“I AM GOD...
I BELIEVE IN YOU—BELIEVE IN ME?”**

Mark my words...

Ask Yourself... Who Do You Believe?

The government?

The authorities and the militaries?

Presidents?

Nations?

The neighbors?

In other words...

It is your beliefs that count. Your actions, your support; they are the fruits of who and what you believe. Are you a gun owner, a soldier? What is your vote? What is your decision? Do you support the troops? Is the government your authority? Are you for peace or for war? And if you are for peace, do you believe Jesus?



**“I AM GOD...
IF THERE IS ANY GOODNESS IN EVIL—
IT IS GOOD TO KNOW THAT EVIL KNOWS WHO I AM.”**

Mark my words...

I confess and admit, at times, I have had doubts as to who God is. Is He truly Jesus Christ? The truth is: having studied many of the world's religions and having seen goodness and godliness in many different aspects of each; I have also come to see and realize aspects of evil in many of these religions. Yet, I have found it much easier and more evident to discern or verify who God actually is if I see, believe and understand the nature and forces of evil more clearly.

In other words...

Most religions believe in The God, a god or gods, or some “supreme being”; but the most simplified and common belief these world religions share is the belief that there is good and there is evil. And that God, or a god, is good—and the devil, or the opposition to God, is evil. Thus, the opposite of good is evil and if God is good, then God's opposition is evil.

My last words...

All-in-all, I have come to discover one undeniable truth and one fact that remains constant throughout the religions of the world, the course of human nature, and of life itself; and it is the greatest proof that I am aware of to testify that Jesus Christ is God—and that positive, truthful proof is this: Whatever the “evil force” in existence is, be it the devil or some spiritual being [and I believe and know it is Satan, the devil]—the greatest opposition from this “evil force” arises to combat anyone who believes in Jesus. And this pure evil is clearly directed at none other than the name and person of Jesus Christ. If there is any goodness in evil—it is good to know that evil knows who God truly is.

CHAPTER: Beliefs

VERSION: The Proof of the Truth

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Aside from the attacks of Satan against Jesus, the greatest proof of the truth of the Gospels and the life of Jesus Christ, I find, comes from the actions of the Apostles; specifically, one common occurrence among them.

At the time of Jesus' crucifixion, not one single disciple was willing to die with or for The Master, Jesus. Yet, all had said they were willing to, but no one did. Especially, his lead disciple, Peter, who vowed time and time again, that he believed in and loved Jesus enough to die for him. Still, he did not.

The great proof for me is the fact that years and years after the death and resurrection of Jesus, 11 of the 13 disciples [apart from John and Judas] were willing to be crucified for their beliefs in Jesus. They were willing to die, simply based on what The Man, Jesus taught; something they were unwilling to do during His lifetime. I cannot think of a more powerful statement as to the life and the truth of who Jesus is.

CHAPTER: *Born Again*
VERSION: {NKJV}

†

**“I AM GOD...
YOU MUST BE BORN AGAIN.”**

John 3:1-7

You Must Be Born Again

¹There was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews.

²This man came to Jesus by night and said to Him, “Rabbi, we know that You are a teacher come from God; for no one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him.”

³Jesus answered and said to him, “Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.”

Mark my words...

We are sinful and unholy because of Adam...unless we can be created again or re-created; we do not have the holy body God requires.

Unless we can be reborn or renewed in this life, we cannot see the Kingdom of God.

Being “born again” is a step to seeing the Kingdom—it is not the only step. Jesus will now [in the Scripture recorded below] explain the other steps. But without taking the first step, no one can reach the Kingdom of God, or Heaven.

⁴Nicodemus said to Him, “How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother’s womb and be born?”

Obviously, this is a biological impossibility. But Nicodemus is also going to get the detailed explanation because he is lacking in knowledge. If we lack in wisdom, here is the explanation...

⁵Jesus answered, “Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God.

“Born of the water” means born as a human being, as from the watery womb of a woman.

“Born of water” is also symbolic of being baptized. Jesus also said to be saved one must “believe and be baptized.”

“Born of the water” also means we must live, work, and serve a life that identifies us as being a creation of Christ.

Yet, all of the above are another step to being “born of the Spirit” and this is the belief and acceptance of Jesus Christ leading to the inner-possession and inhabiting of the Holy Spirit of God within a person.

⁶That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

Jesus knows at the time of a person’s entrance into Heaven, God is not interested in the human body—there will be no human body. God is interested solely in the spirit within that body, the spiritual body of a person.

⁷Do not marvel that I said to you, “You must be born again.”

“Born again,” meaning; people were created from spirit and once we leave our earthly bodies or flesh, people will return to spirit. It is spirit birth and the spirit born again.

And if we have not heard this understanding of being born again, “do not marvel” . . . Jesus knows not many have been instructed in this interpretation and fullness of meaning.

⁸The wind blows where it wishes, and you hear the sound of it, but cannot tell where it comes from and where it goes. So is everyone who is born of the Spirit.”

The initial meaning of this verse speaks of the knowledge and wisdom that God alone has in truthfully knowing the nature and the presence of the Holy Spirit, and if a person truly possesses The Spirit of God within their being; God only knows.

Please read closely and understand another meaning to this verse: Jesus is also letting us know of the temporary nature of The Spirit within the body of a person. That The Spirit can inhabit or exit a person; The Spirit comes and goes. Keep in mind, the Holy Spirit is forever and ever here and available. However, there is no eternal security for a Christian once they receive The Spirit, rather the person must submit moment-by-moment to being filled with The Spirit. Following Jesus all the way to Heaven is a lifelong journey that starts with the first step and ends with the last step.

¹⁰Jesus answered and said to him, “Are you the teacher of Israel, and do not know these things?

Jesus is aware that Nicodemus does not understand. So the message The Lord is giving will not be an easy one to fully understand.

Jesus tells and characterizes for Nicodemus how difficult this is to understand for man. At that time, a teacher of Israel could not clearly understand—if so, the probability exists today that a minister, priest, or person cannot fully understand Jesus’ teaching in all its meaning today.

¹¹Most assuredly, I say to you, We speak what We know and testify what We have seen, and you do not receive Our witness. ¹²If I have told you earthly things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you heavenly things?

God is the Father. God is Jesus Christ. God is the Holy Spirit. And while Nicodemus and the people of the earth were having a hard enough time following God as they knew Him...How difficult it would be to follow God and accept Him in the person of Christ? And take it another step: How much more difficult to follow Him and accept God as the Holy Spirit? And if we don’t accept Jesus, we will never be given or accept The Spirit of God.

¹³No one has ascended to heaven but He who came down from heaven, that is, the Son of Man who is in heaven.

Jesus knows He is God. Jesus knows He is the Christ. Jesus Christ knows He is the Holy Spirit. Jesus Christ only knows.



“I AM GOD...”

John 3:1-8

Born Again {NIV}

³In reply Jesus declared, “I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again.”

⁴“How can a man be born when he is old?” Nicodemus asked. “Surely he cannot enter a second time into his mother’s womb to be born!”

⁵Jesus answered, “I tell you the truth, no one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit. ⁶Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit. ⁷You should not be surprised at my saying, ‘You must be born again.’ ⁸The wind blows wherever it pleases. You hear its sound, but you cannot tell where it comes from or where it is going. So it is with everyone born of the Spirit.”

In other words...

“Born Again” subscribes the fact that it would be better were we not born at all and remain with God in the eternal beginning; than to be given the gift and breath of life, only to lose it because of our sinful nature in eternity, ever after. In addition, in this life we must also be “born again” in newness of life—the Spirit life and the mind of The Lord Jesus Christ. And that we must be baptized in, and truly possess, the Holy Spirit in order that our being is seen as holy by Him on the day of our transformation from this body to our eternal body.

CHAPTER: Born Again

VERSION: What Happens to Children Who Don't Have Time to be "Born Again"? Where Do They Go? How Can They Get to Heaven?

†

**"I AM GOD...
IT IS THE PARENT'S JOB—
AND ONLY 'BORN AGAIN' PARENTS
SHOULD BE HAVING CHILDREN."**

Mark my words...

As well, a couple who wants children should convert to Christianity.

CHAPTER: *Born Again*

VERSION: *But a Person Only Dies Once*

†

**“I AM GOD...
‘BORN AGAIN’ DOES NOT GRANT YOU HEAVEN—
BUT IT DOES OPEN THE GATE.”**

Mark my words...

Jesus Himself said, “Not all who call my name will enter.” But rest assured, being “born again” is the first step. Surely, those who do not take this step are damned.

In other words...

Read on...

CHAPTER: Church
VERSION: Official

†

**“I AM GOD...
MY OFFICIAL CHURCH IS THE BODY OF BODIES
WHICH ARE TRULY FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT.”**

CHAPTER: Church
VERSION: Smallest

†

**“I AM GOD...
WHERE TWO OR THREE ARE GATHERED IN MY NAME.”**

CHAPTER: Church
VERSION: Largest

†

**“I AM GOD...
WHERE ALL ARE GATHERED IN MY NAME.”**

CHAPTER: Commandments

VERSION: Countdown—10...2...1

†

**“I AM GOD...
MY COMMANDMENTS ARE INFINITE.”**

**“I AM GOD...
MY COMMANDMENTS ARE INFINITE—
PLEASE FOLLOW THE 10 I GAVE TO MOSES.”**

**“I AM GOD...
MY COMMANDMENTS ARE INFINITE—
PLEASE FOLLOW THE 2 I GAVE TO MY SON.”**

**“I AM GOD...
MY COMMANDMENTS ARE INFINITE—
PLEASE FOLLOW THE 1 I GAVE TO THE WRITER....
I AM GOD...DO WHAT I TELL YOU TO DO. I LOVE YOU.”**

CHAPTER: Commandments

VERSION: The 2 Great Commandments and the 5+ People Jesus Told Us to Love.



“I AM GOD...”

Mark 12:28-34

The Scribes: Which Is the First Commandment of All?

²⁸Then one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, perceiving that He had answered them well, asked Him, “Which is the first commandment of all?” ²⁹Jesus answered him, “The first of all the commandments is: “Hear, O Israel, the LORD our God, the LORD is one. ³⁰And you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind, and with all your strength.’ This is the first commandment. ³¹And the second, like it, is this: “You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’ There is no other commandment greater than these.” ³²So the scribe said to Him, “Well said, Teacher. You have spoken the truth, for there is one God, and there is no other but He. ³³And to love Him with all the heart, with all the understanding, with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love one’s neighbor as oneself, is more than all the whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.” ³⁴Now when Jesus saw that he answered wisely, He said to him, “You are not far from the kingdom of God.” But after that no one dared question Him.

Mark my words...

To love “the LORD your God” —means to love God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. Jesus also commands us to love two others: your “neighbor,” which in actuality is the entire world [Christians and non-Christians, friends or enemies, all of mankind]. As a matter of fact, people have encouraged not to: “love your neighbor as yourself—but love your neighbor better than you love yourself!” In addition, it is all-important to not neglect the “other person” Jesus wants us to love...ourselves [that unique, one-of-a-kind individual The Lord God Himself created, loves, and died for].

CHAPTER: Communication

VERSION: Silent!

†

**“I AM GOD...
OFTEN, I SPEAK IN SILENCE.”**



**“I AM GOD...
CONFESS TO ME OR TO EACH OTHER
[NOT PEOPLE IN HEAVEN—THEY CANNOT HEAR YOU].”**

James 5:13-18

Meeting Specific Needs

¹³Is anyone among you suffering? Let him pray. Is anyone cheerful? Let him sing psalms. ¹⁴Is anyone among you sick? Let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord. ¹⁵And the prayer of faith will save the sick, and the Lord will raise him up. And if he has committed sins, he will be forgiven. ¹⁶Confess your trespasses to one another, and pray for one another, that you may be healed. The effective, fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much. ¹⁷Elijah was a man with a nature like ours, and he prayed earnestly that it would not rain; and it did not rain on the land for three years and six months. ¹⁸And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth produced its fruit.

Mark my words...

When I was younger, the love of my life [even above God]: my mother, died. I lived for roughly 10 years in great, suicidal pain over this loss. In part, because from the bottom of my heart, I had no one to talk to; in addition, I naturally missed my life with her.

I used to believe and had been taught; I could talk or pray to her in Heaven. I did so, not only to continue my relationship with her; but to forge a bond between her, the Almighty God, and the power over the earth. Still, I found no comfort in speaking with her. The relationship was, in a sense, one-sided since I did all the talking and not once did, I hear her voice or sense her

presence; nor did I seem any closer to God. In fact, I grew further apart from Him. And lastly, I was not more empowered here on earth.

Then I finally asked God what to do, and God spoke to me. He told me she couldn't hear me. That no one who has passed from this life to the eternal life could communicate with anyone here on earth. This was news to me. Faithfully, it became good news, because three things came about because of it.

1. I would naturally have to talk to someone; so the prayer life between God and I strengthened. And when it came to confession, I received greater healing and blessing from speaking with my Creator and to those with whom I live with here on earth.

2. I received immeasurable peace by understanding that I could not confess or communicate with her—that the Holy Spirit, alone, was my comforter. In addition, when it came time to confess my life to others, there was finally progress in my life.

3. I would begin to have unbelievable and realistic dreams about my mother and an entirely new and God-ordained life had begun with her.

**“I AM GOD...
IT IS SIN TO TALK TO THE DEAD.
IN AS MUCH AS THEY CAN'T HEAR YOU—
YOU ARE BEING DECEIVED.
YOU SHOULD BE SPEAKING WITH ME.
ANY BLESSINGS OR HEALINGS, OR POSITIVE CHANGES IN
YOUR LIFE WILL COME FROM ME HERE IN HEAVEN, OR
AS I WORK IN THE MINDS, HEARTS, SPIRITS AND LIVES OF
OTHERS OF YOU ON EARTH.
THAT IS WHY I DID NOT CREATE ONE SINGLE HUMAN.
I DO NOT WANT YOU TO BE ALONE.
YOU HAVE ONE ANOTHER AND MY HOLY SPIRIT.”**

In other words...

Heaven
↑
Confess and communicate to God or to each other ⇨ Earth

CHAPTER: Creation
VERSION: In the Beginning...

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

God’s first characteristic and act, His first and foremost expression of Himself, His love, and His nature; was to be a creator: The Creator.

¹In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth (Genesis 1:1).

The first truth is: God is a creator. God created man: life on the earth. And God loves the life He created enough that...

²⁷So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them (Genesis 1:27).

God then commanded and told man...

¹⁷but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die (Genesis 2:17)."

Then Satan, the destroyer, tempted man to partake of this knowledge and with it: the choice to live or to die. And man, man chose, by his disobedience: death. Thus Satan, through man, brought death and destruction into the world.

In other words...

Today, there is good and there is evil. There is life and there is death. Therefore, there is only one conclusion: life is good and of God—and death is evil and of the devil...

...ONE PERSON KILLS AND ONE PERSON DIES...end of story.

CHAPTER: Creation

VERSION: Evolution: "God, answer me: creation or evolution?"

†

"I AM GOD... BOTH"

Mark my words...

God is a God of both creation and evolution. He is the Creator of all, and yet much of what He created evolves from one form to another, because everything that evolves had to have had a start. Let it be known God is the God and the Creator of evolution.

In other words...

Darwinists, or those not believing in the godly story of Creation, are deceived by Satan. Satan, by having people not believe in Adam and Eve, will then have people not knowing or believing how sin came into being. And, if Satan can blind you to the nature of sin, then you would have reason to discount the cause and work of Jesus. Satan's weapons are deceit and destruction; and his war is against Jesus.

My last words...

Evolution is not, alone, disbelief in God the Creator...It is Satan deceiving humans into thinking that God, the creator of mankind, could not come to earth as a man, Himself, in the person of Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER: Creation

VERSION: “God created me this way.”

†

**“I AM GOD...
NO, I DID NOT.”**

Genesis 1:27

²⁷So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.

Mark my words...

When a person justifies their sinful action with the line “God created me this way”—especially concerning sexual or deviant physical behavior—this is a lie. God did not create us [man], this way. The Bible clearly states the physical nature of man at The Creation. And that is in the image of a sinless, perfect, and holy God.



“I AM GOD...”

Genesis 6:6

Noah Makes the Ark

¹Now it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born to them, ²that the sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose.

³And the LORD said, “My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, for he is indeed flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years.”

⁴There were giants on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.

⁵Then The Lord saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. ⁶And the LORD was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. ⁷So the LORD said, “I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth, both man and beast, creeping thing and birds of the air, for I am sorry that I have made them.” ⁸But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD.

Mark my words...

God does not want to be sad—or have regrets—so when He regretted creating man [Noah’s story] and flooded the earth...I do not think God knew how evil man would become. Before then, I don’t think He knew man would sin. He created man perfect, like Himself, and in the Spirit of love, perfect love. God gave man free-will. He gave man [God’s second creation], like the angels [God’s first creation] created before man: a second chance at living life as we know it and call it, knowing and being content as following or being less than God. But man, like the fallen angel Satan, chose and wished to be like God. God was “burnt” a second time.

CHAPTER: Death

VERSION: Fear of Death

†

“I AM GOD...

**THE KEY TO A LONG AND BLESSED LIFE
IS NOT HAVING A FEAR OF DEATH.”**

CHAPTER: Death

VERSION: Death Misunderstood

†

**“I AM GOD...
DEATH IS MISUNDERSTOOD.”**

- God exists.
- God created angels.
- An angel, Satan, chose to be like God.
- God cast Satan out of Heaven.
- God creates earth.
- Satan is sent to earth. And God gives him rule there.
- God created man, in God’s image—“in” and “out of” love.
- God, in love, gives man “free-will”: the power to choose.
- God creates animals. Man is given his “power of choice” to name all the animals.
- God creates woman from man.
- Satan attacks the woman, who, in turn, also deceives the man.
- The man and woman gain the knowledge of sin. Satan and sin are given rule, again, over earth.
- All of mankind is born with a sinful nature. And all sin leads to death.
- God knows to send Himself, His Son, Jesus into the world to redeem His creation.

- God chooses the Jewish people to be the human body He inhabits.
- God knows that all religions and peoples will kill one another into earthly extinction and eternal separation from Him.
- God knows that He, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit are love and life. They are everlasting love and life.
- God comes as Jesus to reconcile mankind, God's creation, back to Him for eternity.
- Man can use his "choice" to believe Jesus is God and to be a disciple of Jesus Christ's.
- Jesus dies for man's sin. He does, so He can conquer death and be raised to life. The life that can only be eternal, again.
- A "Christian" belief in Jesus—man's choice to believe and recognize Jesus for Who He is—will allow man to see Jesus at death.
- The powerful choice to not believe Jesus will get you an appointment to see Jesus and be judged to Hell.
- The "Christian's" choice will get them to Judgment. However, not all will be accepted by Jesus for Heaven.
- The "Born Again" and all "Christian's" will be judged on life and death; on their beliefs and actions regarding all of God's creation.
- Jesus is obligated to cast the murderous, sinful heart to the eternal home of the destructor of life: Satan.
- The God of love...and creator of life...can only accept the righteous and sin-free [by the life-death-life of Jesus Christ].

CHAPTER: Death

VERSION: "I am dying to get to Heaven."



**"I AM GOD...
DEATH IS A GOOD THING WHEN IN YOUR GREATEST
OF WEAKNESSES AND YOUR WEAKEST OF WEAKNESSES—
YOU ARE OPEN TO ACCEPT THE HOLY SPIRIT—
THE SOLE WAY TO AN ETERNAL LIFE OF SALVATION."**

Mark my words...

I have experienced the most out of life. I have seen the evil and I have seen the good...I have done a lot of bad things, but I have done some good..."I am dying to get to Heaven."

CHAPTER: Death
VERSION: Slow Death...



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

God graciously allows your [outward] body to perish, but this gives you time to accept Jesus and have the Holy Spirit fill your [inward] body. And only in this condition of being Spirit-filled, can a person reach eternal life and salvation in Heaven.

At this moment, as you slowly die, a person has 3 choices: Either become a Christian and receive the Holy Spirit—or, if you are a Christian, have the Holy Spirit remain within you. If you don't choose either—you are going to Hell.

[Part of the reason Jesus didn't accept drugs on the cross, was not only because He chose to bear all the sin of the world and the pain and suffering that goes with it—but He did not want to give up the Holy Spirit to be filled with an evil spirit.]

In other words...

Now, if you are flying high, let's say in a plane and the plane is going down, and your “life flashes before your eyes”; suddenly, you must make 3 choices:

If you are a Christian, then pray you do not lose The Spirit; but if you are not, pray to God to accept Jesus and receive the Holy Spirit—or pray to God, your heart has not grown hard and you chose not to ask or accept Jesus Christ.

Rest assured, for the hard-hearted or non-Christian, one of three things will happen as you head on your way down...either you don't ask because of your pride, in which case Satan has gotten you and you die and go to Hell...or, you ask God to accept Jesus Christ, and Satan deceives you by asking you: “Do you really think you need Jesus Christ to get to Heaven?” If you agree with him: you're dead. And if you don't agree with him: your dead, but at least you die and go to be with God in Heaven.

CHAPTER: Death

VERSION: Death “Certificate” —Certifying the Heart and State of a Person at Death...



**“I AM GOD...
YOU CAN TELL MUCH ABOUT A PERSON’S SPIRITUAL
NATURE
BY THE WAY THAT THEY DIE.”**

Mark my words...

The Archangel Michael is the “angel at death.” He is God’s supreme angel that leads the way to Jesus at the time of a “true” Christian’s earthly death. Only Jesus knows what is in a man’s heart, and only Jesus knows the day and hour when a person will die. An accurate way to determine the heart of a person—is the means by which they die—their state of living and final action at the time of Christ “calling them home.” Keep in mind; Jesus determines the death of every man, but man’s choice on earth determines if that earthly death—the death that leads to eternal life—shall be spent in Heaven or Hell. It is solely dependent on the acceptance of Jesus as the Son of God and the inhabitation of the Holy Spirit.

In other words...

From a human standpoint, man looks at the way a person dies and the life they were living—and determines their death was due to their lifestyle. For instance, a person may die from heart or lung cancer and thus man determines that smoking caused their death. And perhaps the cancer was a result of the lifestyle that person led.

From Satan’s point-of-view, Satan knows the spiritual condition of all human beings and he sends evil spirits or sinful temptations; and the resulting sinful actions that initiate the descent unto death because the devil coerced, deceived, and coordinated your mortal death based on the spiritual condition you were in. For instance, if you are demon-possessed with a killing spirit—the devil will work to have your body destroyed in your evil condition by someone killing you.

From God's viewpoint, He looks at the spiritual condition of a person and their death is reflective of the good or evil life they are living. From God's viewpoint...He is patient and longsuffering, waiting for and wanting a person to die when they are filled with the Holy Spirit. He will do everything in His power to offer you the chance to accept the death of Jesus in defeating the work of Satan over the battle for your soul. During that warfare, Satan, innumerable times, will try to take your earthly life from you and seek God's permission to do so. And at one point, God will allow Satan to end your earthly life. At that point, it is your choice as to the condition of your spirit and ultimately whether you will live for the rest of eternity in Heaven or Hell.

My last words...

Just as with a person there is listed a "cause of death"; these are the simple causes to die for:

Jesus

- A death like Jesus—"Laying down one's life for one's brothers." This is what Jesus did and spoke of.

[Ex. Joe Delaney, a football player who couldn't swim, but drowns trying to be a "lifesaver" and rescue others.]

11 Disciples

- A disciple's death. Eleven of the thirteen disciples died for belief in their faith: their belief in Jesus. Essentially, they did just what He did. And as well, they would be executed or assassinated for this belief.

[Ex. Rev. Martin Luther King who was assassinated while preaching a Gospel message; Casey, the Columbine High shooting victim, who, at gunpoint, when asked if she believed in Jesus, replied, "Yes"... and was then shot dead.]

1 Disciple

- Like John; the apostles' death at an old age, in peace, working for The Lord.

[Ex. Mother Teresa who humbly dedicated her life to serving Christ, and who died of natural causes, was overshadowed in the news by the death of a more infamous woman. Keep in mind, the most disciple-like death, apart from being killed or sacrificing your life would be dying in one's sleep.]

1 Disciple

- *Judas, a believer, died from suicide/self-destruction, having lost his faith, he became “antichrist” and died in disobedience.*

Not a disciple

- *The evil death, death from suicide/self-destruction, an earthly death, a sinner’s death; a death in disobedience to the way of Jesus. Keep in mind, there are many manifestations of a self-destructive death. And often times, the more violent a death; the more disobedient a person was.*

[Ex. Princess Diana of Wales died in a violent car crash. Her funeral was the same day as the death of Mother Teresa. And if Diana did not believe in Jesus and was not filled with the Holy Spirit at the time of her death, she is in Hell.]

CHAPTER: *Death*
VERSION: *God Calls Us Home*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Believing in Jesus gives us salvation and an eternal home in Heaven. Our fear of death is relieved, because we know where and with whom we will be. This is just what The One in whom we must believe, did: He overcame death. So we must believe in the only way, power and person to defeat death: Jesus. This is why we can say, feel, and believe: God is calling us home.

CHAPTER: *Death*

VERSION: *The Great Ways to Die*



**“I AM GOD...
THERE ARE 3 CHRIST-LIKE WAYS
FOR YOUR PHYSICAL LIFE TO END.”**

Mark my words...

The three Christ-like ways for your physical life to end are:

- *Death of the disciples [and to lay down one's life for our brother].*
- *Sleep [like in the death of John, the disciple].*
- *Alive with the Holy Spirit [and “changed”] when Christ comes again. Please read CHAPTER: The Rapture—VERSION: 1 Corinthians 15:50-58, 1 Thessalonians 4:17-18*

CHAPTER: Demons
VERSION: Jesus Knew



**“I AM GOD...
DEMONS ARE REAL—VERY REAL.”**

Mark my words...

Demonic activity and the spirit world are the most undiscovered and unexplored realm; and the most undefended, undermanned battle in this day and time. The Bible records [and does not record] Jesus spending an unbelievable amount of time, prayer and energy healing those with demons. Not only did Jesus recognize how many people were in need of demonic exorcism, but that demon-possession was the cause of most sin and self-destruction. Most importantly, Jesus knew the eternal importance of the spiritual condition of man. He knew that the Holy Spirit to come, and Satan, were at war for the bodily possession and souls of mankind.

In other words...

Ask yourself: What or who came between God's Spirit and the devil's spirit? There is only one thing and one person that divides the two as black is from white, and good is from evil; and He is the one and only...The Savior of Mankind: Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER: Demons

VERSION: "Demons be gone!"

†

**"I AM GOD...
MAN IS NOT INSANE—
BUT IN SATAN."**

Mark my words...

90% of people who are diagnosed or called "mentally ill" or "insane"; God knows are actually possessed by evil spirits.

In other words...

Only 10% are born with a mental handicap that has developed and spread from the sinful seed of self-destruction that had been evolutionarily passed on by the fall of man.

My last words...

Every, or 100% of all diseases, handicaps, or illnesses is directly related to the fall of man at the hands of Satan.

CHAPTER: Demons

VERSION: I Am Having a Demon of a Time

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

When people lightheartedly say, “He’s got his demons.” Truthfully, do not take this statement lightly, because the truth of the matter is: people do have demons.

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Satan's Nature—In Place*

†

**“I AM GOD...
YOU MAY END IN HELL.”**

The Angel Satan

↓↓↓

●

Earth

Satan is cast out
of Heaven and
down to Earth

Mark my words...

Evil, demonic angels need to inhabit a place. Once they do, they often appear in bodily form. And evil or demonic spirits need to possess a body; so Satan picked Eve and lied to her. She, in turn, told Adam the lie and Adam sinned. This allowed Satan to self-destruct Adam. Eventually, the seed of all children birthed—apart from Jesus, God Himself—would surely self-destruct or die. Once Adam and Eve die, leaving behind their body—Satan can go back to roaming the earth as the demonic angel and his demons as spirits. The devil now sends his demonic forces to rule over the place and his spirits to inhabit man's bodies, ultimately killing all of creation, including animals and humans.

In other words...

Just as evil angels are of death, destruction and darkness; God's good angels of light are also created beings. And they too, may appear as a humanistic or animalistic body, but cannot possess those bodies. God's good angels can take the form of animals, just as evil angels [ex. the garden serpent] did. In addition, the Holy Spirit or evil and demonic spirits are the ones which possess the bodies of animals and humans. Keep in mind, you can go to Hell.

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Satan's Nature—In Person*

†

**“I AM GOD...
THE DEVIL IS THE ‘FATHER OF LIES’:
DON’T BELIEVE THE LIE.”**

Mark my words...

To think and believe, “the spirit and person of the devil doesn’t exist”; how blatantly prideful and deceptive is that? The devil wants us to not believe in his existence. This, since he does exist, is the ultimate deception. What else should be expected from the “Father of Lies” as Jesus called him? Thank God, Jesus is truth, and we know to be on the lookout for the lying devil that does exist.

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Even Satan Is Not an Atheist*

†

**“I AM GOD...
AN ATHEIST IS A SATANIST.”**

Mark my words...

There are absolutely only two kinds of people in existence: those who believe in God and those who do not.

In other words...

Even Satan believes in and knows there is a God—but that won't keep him from blinding the eyes of man and leading man to purposely walk in darkness.

CHAPTER: The Devil
VERSION: Hate Satan

†

**“I AM GOD...
IT’S ENOUGH FOR THE BELIEVER TO LOVE JESUS—
BUT TO REALLY IMPROVE YOUR FAITH,
YOU NEED TO LOVE JESUS AND HATE SATAN.”**

CHAPTER: *The Devil*
VERSION: *Satan's Temptation*

†

“I AM GOD... IT IS WRITTEN...”

Mark my words...

What a blessing and weapon it is to have written words from God on how to defend against satanic temptation and attack.

And just as David used a rock to slay Goliath; in truth, he first used a sling and a prayer. In this analogy, the rock would be God, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit; the sling would be words of God; and the prayer would be the words: “It is written.”

There are three ways to defeat Satan by using this plan of defense and attack:

I. Exodus 24:12

Then the LORD said to Moses, “Come up to Me on the mountain and be there; and I will give you tablets of stone, and the law and commandments which I have written, that you may teach them.”

1. God says...“It is written...”

- 10 Commandments

The first is by using any one of the 10 Commandments or Laws of God against Satan, the devil, for example: “[It is written]: ³“You shall have no other gods before Me (Exodus 20:3).

II. Matthew 22:36-40

³⁶“Teacher, which is the great commandment in the law?”

³⁷Jesus said to him, ““You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’ ³⁸This is the first and great commandment. ³⁹And the second is like it: “You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’ ⁴⁰On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.”

2. Jesus says...“It is written...”

- 2 Commandments

The second can be the Words and Commandments spoken by The Savior of the World who said: [“It is written...”] “...love God with all your heart...and love your neighbor as yourself.”

Note:

Matthew 4:4

⁴But He answered and said, “It is written, “Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God.”

Matthew 4:7

⁷Jesus said to him, “It is written again, “You shall not tempt the LORD your God.”

Matthew 4:10

¹⁰Then Jesus said to him, “Away with you, Satan! For it is written, “You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.”

[Note also: When Jesus was alone on the wilderness mountain fasting for 40 days, each of the three times Jesus was tempted by Satan with every sin known to man, Jesus opened His defense with the words: “It is written...”—“It is written man should not live by bread alone....It is written, you shall not tempt The Lord, thy God....It is written you should worship The Lord God alone...” It is written...it is written...it is written.]

III. 1 John 4:4

⁴You are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because He who is in you is greater than he who is in the world.

3. The Holy Spirit says...“It is written...”

“He [the Holy Spirit] who is within you is stronger than the world around you.”

The third can be the used by the disciples in relation to the power and presence of the Holy Spirit of God; when the disciples wrote the spoken words: [“It is written...] He [the Holy Spirit] who is within you is stronger than the world around you.”

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Be Ever on Alert—The Devil's Objectives*

†

**“I AM GOD...
BE EVER ON ALERT—
THE DEVIL'S #2 GOAL ON EARTH
IS TO HAVE A PERSON DIE.
THE DEVIL'S #1 GOAL
IS TO GET A PERSON TO NOT BELIEVE IN JESUS.”**

Mark my words...

Jesus taught and told man the devil is a liar and a destroyer: a destroyer [of life] second...and a liar [about Jesus] first.

In other words...

Both of these statements are true—especially in the light of the fact that Jesus is the Creator and the one who gives life in the first place.

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Be Ever on Alert—The Devil's Deception*

†

**“I AM GOD...
BE EVER ON ALERT—
THE DEVIL DECEIVES BY ASKING A QUESTION.”**

Mark my words...

Satan asks a question...

Once I was shopping for crackers...In the first, easily accessible market, there was a type of cracker that cost \$1.00. It was not my favorite type, so I thought to mentally ask God if these were the crackers that I should get at the time. First of all, I asked because I wanted what He wanted for me; secondly, because I knew, He knew what was best for me. Furthermore, I knew that He knew if this was the only store I would be able to make it to. And if I did not get them now, I may not get them at all.

So I checked with God, and I clearly sensed He said: “No.” So, I asked again, and more loudly, I sensed He said: “No, wait.” I asked a third time, and I sensed He said: “No, wait, trust me.” I asked a fourth time, and I sensed He said: “No, wait, trust me, and don’t ask Me again.”

Immediately, I sensed a thought say: “Are you sure that’s God telling you that, or is it just you?”

Then when I thought about it again, I said to myself: “Maybe it is just me. I don’t think it’s the devil telling me that it is not God—I think that’s just me questioning myself three times over.”

So I asked again [as God ordered me not to do] and said, “Tell me for sure you don’t want me to buy these crackers.”

And again, I received the response, “It’s just you talking to yourself and questioning yourself, I know you know there’s a devil but get the crackers now, why take a chance?”

Moments later, I bought the crackers and knew in my heart I was being disobedient. But after such a debate in my mind, over such a seemingly meaningless thing, I was worn out and would rather test the initial answers I got with the eventual justification and satisfaction of finding out I was right, and the thoughts or “voices” at work were not God’s or the devil’s at all, but my own thoughts and questions, and my own thoughts and answers.

The moral of the story...moments later, in an unforeseen way, I happened upon a newly revealed market that had the exact crackers I wanted for half the price.

The lesson to be learned is...In the first place, when the devil desires to get you out of God’s plan or will—he will ask you a question. And his trick is to not ask a simple “yes” or “no” answered question or even to supply a “yes” or “no” comeback to the response of the question that you asked God—what he does is question where the “voice” or answer came from? Because he knows you will then have to decide, not between the simple “yes” or “no”; but the more complex and harder to discern or tell issue of “where did the voice come from in the first place?”

Satan’s second M.O. [modus operandi or method of operation] is to have you not believe the truth of the response, but the truthfulness about the responder.

Thirdly, the devil will then trick you with the sensations, emotions, and victorious feeling of defeating God or in a sense, outwitting God or being smarter than God. This is sinful pride. Yet again, and here is the trick; it is not as to whether the answer of “yes” or “no” is correct; but in the right or wrong identification of who the voices at play were. And truth be told, God has never, ever lost in giving the truthful, wisest, or right answer. He is a perfect 100% and man is 0-for-infinity.

Lastly, the devil’s trick is to have you believe that there are only ever two voices at play: yours and God’s. At this point, it’s not even a question as to the existence of the devil in this 3-way debate [God vs. Man vs. Satan]. It is the question-and-answer battle in the apparent 2-way [God vs. Man] debate. And the deception here is not that the debate is 2-way [God vs. Man]; but that the 2-way debate is God versus the devil! Basically, “man’s” choice is the devil’s decision. There is only one God and He has all the answers.

In other words...

Keep in mind, once you ask God a question or you think the thought of asking Him a question; He will normally respond by clearly replying “yes” or “no.” Jesus said, “let your ‘yes’ be ‘yes’ and your ‘no’ be ‘no.’” As well, God may give the response in a clear-cut and direct statement. Finally, He may also [usually when your mind is unclear and your Spirit has not been more perfected] allow you to reason for His response. But be warned, there is a distinct difference

between reasoning some of the complex parts you may need to determine the answer to a question; compared to rationalizing away the nature of God and breaking down His answer to one that is satanic. And as noted, God does not answer your question by letting you question where the voice came from. Jesus said, "I am the shepherd, my sheep hear my voice, and they know me." Nor will God ask a question designed to confuse, mislead or tempt you [for the devil is a devil of confusion, deceit and temptation]. Always keep in mind, God is God; He knows you and He knows the answer to everything.

My last words...

The devil's 4 main tricks are:

- The devil asks you a difficult question designed to confuse you.*
- The devil lies and gives you the wrong answer.*
- The devil prides you into letting you think you are smarter or more knowing than God.*
- The devil does not exist in the first place.*

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Be Ever on Alert—The Devil's Perversion*



**“I AM GOD...
BE EVER ON ALERT—
SATAN DECEIVES BY PERVERTING SCRIPTURE.”**

Mark my words...

Satan knows Scripture. When the devil tempted Jesus on the mountaintop three times, Satan kept saying to Jesus, “It is written...” This means that the devil knows the Bible and what is written in it. He will try and deceive you as to what the Words of God truly are and if you are not better read or versed, or more knowledgeable in Scripture than he is—you will tend to believe him. A perfect example of this is the original or first sin of Eve and Adam:

Genesis 3:1-3

The Fall of Man

¹Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, “Has God indeed said, ‘You shall not eat of every tree of the garden?’”

²And the woman said to the serpent, “We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden; ³but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, “You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die.”

Initially here, Satan deceives and tricks not by giving an opposing [and always opposite] answer to God, but Satan tempts and tricks Eve by asking a question designed to question what God said. Basically he poses: “Was the voice God’s in the first place or something or someone else [namely herself]?”

Another trick in the devil's book is to get a person in a debate, a question-and-answer session. A word game or play on words whereby the devil, in just a small twist, can turn the words of God upside down and have you believing right is wrong and truth is lie.

*But the deeper deception lies, literally, in Satan's use of the Word of God: **"Has God indeed said, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden'?"** The fact that Satan knew something of the conversation and words between God and his creation, had to lead Eve into believing that he, the devil, had superior knowledge and information, or some close connection between himself and the Creator. She had to doubt herself. And most meaningful, she had to believe that the devil knew more about God than she did.*

Finally, the deepest deception is in the fact that she had never had contact with the devil before. She never knew who he was or how he operated, or worse yet, that he even existed. And if she never knew he existed, how easy it would be for her to believe that although he did—he didn't.

In other words...

Again, look at Satan's nature:

- *The devil is the most intelligent and powerful being on earth; second to, but apart from God.*
- *The devil lies.*
- *The devil confuses.*
- *The devil is prideful.*
- *The devil is powerful.*
- *The devil "doesn't exist" or man does not know who Satan really is.*

Later, you will read that Satan tempted God with pride and the competition, if you will, to be proven as smart as or smarter than God.

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Be Ever on Alert—H.A.L.T—Charles Stanley*

†

**“I AM GOD...
BE EVER ON ALERT—”**

H.A.L.T

Mark my words...

Charles Stanley teaches a valuable lesson on the times when man is most open to Satan's temptations and sin. He encourages, just think:

H—Hungry

A—Angry

L—Lonely

T—Tired

In other words...

When any one or a combination of these is present in a human being, that person is most susceptible and open to satanic attack. Therefore, the key is to replenish or supply whichever ones may be lacking or weak.

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Spiritual Warfare—Satan's Plan of Attack*



**“I AM GOD...
SATAN ATTACKS ON THREE FRONTS.”**

Mark my words...

Satan attacks your spirit in 3 ways. These are the methods used to possess your spiritual body:

- *Mind [Thoughts]*
- *Heart [Hatred]*
- *Body [Injury]*

In other words...

Satan's first attack comes to your mind. Let it be known; you will be tempted with an evil thought. That evil thought is Satan's communication to you for you to commit a sin. If you commit the sin, Satan has deceived you. You will then be tempted to commit the same sin, or a similar sin. If you sin, the floodgate is opened for the possession of a demon; then demons; and then an evil spirit itself. The truth of the matter is once demons and an evil spirit possess your mind, they will possess your body since your mind is contained in your body; you are then prone to mental illness and eventually death.

Secondly, Satan attacks your heart. Let it be known, once demons possess your heart you are then prone to bodily possession leading to emotional illness and eventually death. However, the devil's second means of entry in this spiritual war is by directly attacking your heart through hatred. Once he attacks and hardens your heart, the floodgate is opened for the possession of a demon; then demons; and then an evil spirit itself. The truth of the matter is once demons and an evil spirit possess your heart, they will possess your body since your heart is contained in your body; you are then prone to emotional illness and eventually death.

Thirdly, Satan attacks your body. Let it be known, once demons possess your mind and/or heart, you are then prone to bodily possession leading to physical illness and eventually death. However, the devil's third means of entry in this spiritual war is by directly attacking your body through injury, illness, or accident. Once he attacks and weakens you, the floodgate is opened for the possession of a demon; then demons; and then an evil spirit itself. The truth of the matter is once demons and an evil spirit possess your body, you are then prone to physical illness and eventually death.

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Spiritual Warfare—The Battle to Defeat Satan*



**“I AM GOD...
THE KEY TO HUMAN LIFE—
IS THE BATTLE TO DEFEAT SATAN.”**

Mark my words...

Every minute of every day, Satan is seeking a way to tempt and trick us and lead us away from God. He uses his demons to possess us and works to lead us to the wrong, sinful, life-threatening choices that lead us to death. Literally, when we are devoid of the Holy Spirit—we are prone to self-destructive death [keep in mind, all death is self-destruction]. The key for man is to live in the power and possession of the Holy Spirit. The person in the Holy Spirit will have the chance to sacrifice their life for one another—and that Spirit will allow us to be presentable at The Judgment. Contrarily, in demonic possession—Satan captures us, and we die apart from the Holy Spirit—and it is only Spirit and holiness that makes us presentable before God. Demonic possession at the time of death leads to satanic possession, in Hell, for our eternal life—an eternal life that is no more than eternal death.*

**NOTE: Please read CHAPTER: The Devil—VERSION: The Great Ways to Die.
And what The Lord expects of our life [i.e. laying it down for another].*

CHAPTER: *The Devil*

VERSION: *Spiritual Warfare—Satan's Greatest Defeat*



**“I AM GOD...
IN MY WISDOM, I ALLOWED JESUS TO DIE.”**

Mark my words...

God was winning when Judas and others chose to betray and murder Jesus. What Satan thought was murder, was in truth, in God's eyes: sacrifice. Imagine the shock and surprise Satan must have realized when he thought he won in Jesus' death.

In other words...

Jesus rose from the dead and made “the greatest comeback known to man” and went on to defeat Satan and emerge The Victor!

CHAPTER: Disciples

VERSION: Life or Death of Disciples / Resurrection

†

**“I AM GOD...
THIS IS THE WAY OF LIFE AND
DEATH FOR MY DISCIPLES.”**

John 21:15-22

Jesus Restores Peter

¹⁵So when they had eaten breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, “Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me more than these?”

He said to Him, “Yes, Lord; You know that I love You.”

He said to him, “Feed My lambs.”

¹⁶He said to him again a second time, “Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?”

He said to Him, “Yes, Lord; You know that I love You.”

He said to him, “Tend My sheep.”

¹⁷He said to him the third time, “Simon, son of Jonah, do you love Me?”

Peter was grieved because He said to him the third time, “Do you love Me?”

And he said to Him, “Lord, You know all things; You know that I love You.”

Jesus said to him, “Feed My sheep. ¹⁸Most assuredly, I say to you, when you were younger, you girded yourself and walked where you wished; but when you are old, you will stretch out your hands, and another will gird you and carry you where you do not wish.” ¹⁹This He spoke, signifying by what death he would glorify God. And when He had spoken this, He said to him, “Follow Me.”

**“I AM GOD...
FEED MY LAMBS—
TEND MY SHEEP—
FEED MY SHEEP.”**

Mark my words...

Three times Jesus spoke to Peter; just as Satan, 3 times, tempted Jesus. Yes, in the Bible, the triple mention of things shows literal importance, but from Jesus' infinite perspective this is more meaningful and powerful. Jesus, in a way, has defeated Satan by this. Almost like “what comes around goes around.” Satan tempts; Jesus speaks. Satan tempts; Jesus speaks. Satan tempts; Jesus speaks.

The Beloved Disciple and His Book

²⁰Then Peter, turning around, saw the disciple whom Jesus loved following, who also had leaned on His breast at the supper, and said, “Lord, who is the one who betrays You?” ²¹Peter, seeing him, said to Jesus, “But Lord, what about this man?”

²²Jesus said to him, “If I will that he remain till I come, what is that to you? You follow Me.”

In other words...

The author writes again, just mentioning the thought of Judas and what he did; and again, Jesus tells Peter to “follow Him”; follow meaning: listen, learn, walk, believe and die.

CHAPTER: Earth
VERSION: Isaiah and Columbus

†

**“I AM GOD...
ISAIAH SAW THE WORLD AS A SPHERE CENTURIES
BEFORE COLUMBUS.”**

Isaiah 40:21-23

²¹Have you not known?

Have you not heard?

Has it not been told you from the beginning?

Have you not understood from the foundations of the earth?

²²It is He who sits above the circle of the earth,

And its inhabitants are like grasshoppers,

Who stretches out the heavens like a curtain,

And spreads them out like a tent to dwell in.

²³He brings the princes to nothing;

He makes the judges of the earth useless.

Mark my words...

Isn't that amazing? The prophet Isaiah and the writers of the Bible knew that the earth was round, spherical or circular in shape long before Christopher Columbus, centuries later, discovered that it was not flat as many believed.

In other words...

Science does not confirm God's Word—God's Word was established from the beginning of time.

CHAPTER: Earth

VERSION: Mother Nature?

†

**“I AM GOD...
I AM FATHER NATURE.”**

†

**“I AM GOD...
HOW LIKE YOU TO
DESTROY AND DESECRATE
THE BEAUTIFUL PLACE CALLED A
PLANET I MADE FOR YOU AND THEN
FLEE IT. YOU HAVE MADE THE EARTH A METAL
ASHTRAY—FULL OF SMOKE AND CIGARETTE BUTTS.
YOU HAVE POLLUTED MY AIR, LAND, AND WATER.
I AM SO ANGRY THAT I COULD HATE YOU FOR IT, BUT
IT IS AND WAS YOUR CHOICE TO DESTROY IT; JUST AS
YOU DESTROY YOUR BODIES WHICH ARE THE TEMPLES
FOR MY HOLY SPIRIT. SO, I, BEING A LOVING AND
FORGIVING; AN ETERNALLY-WISE GOD—WILL LET
YOU LIVE IN YOUR SELF-DESTRUCTION AND YOUR
SELF-DESTRUCTIVE STATES OF BEING. I WILL
RECREATE WITH MY SON AND SPIRIT,
PROVIDED YOU BELIEVE IN HIM;
A NEW BODY FOR YOU, AND
A NEW HEAVEN, AND A
NEW EARTH.”**

CHAPTER: Earth

VERSION: Procrastination of a Universal Principle

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

The world expands exponentially. Cause and effect are multiplication—not addition. The laws of give and take; reap and sow; play out this way...you give 1, you get 1—now you have 2. You give 2; you get 2—now you have 4. You give 4; you get 4—now you have 8.

In only 3 turns, decisions, moves, investments; you’ve gone from 1 total in your possession to 8—not, from 1 to 4. Thus you don’t add—you multiply...This is how the earth and its events move so rapidly: why things happen as they do.

CHAPTER: *Earth*

VERSION: *New Heaven...New Earth*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Think not that life existed on Mars—think that God is preparing Mars for life to exist.

In other words...

I once had a startling and amazing vision: God, the Creator of the Universe, proved beyond a shadow of a doubt, He was the Creator by defying gravity and moving the earth from its foundation. He took the planet earth out of its place and into its eternal destruction. He moved and made Mars to be the new earth.

CHAPTER: *Earth*

VERSION: *He's got the Whole World*



**“I AM GOD...
IN MY HAND, I HOLD EVERY BODY.”**

Job 9:5-7

**⁵He removes the mountains, and they do not know
When He overturns them in His anger;
⁶He shakes the earth out of its place,
And its pillars tremble;
⁷He commands the sun, and it does not rise;
He seals off the stars;**

Isaiah 13:13

**¹³Therefore I will shake the heavens,
And the earth will move out of her place,
In the wrath of the LORD of hosts
And in the day of His fierce anger.**

Mark my words...

*In a vision, I have seen the end of the world—
The almighty God will shake the earth off of its axis.*

In other words...

God will end the world with the one major natural and supernatural event that man cannot deceptively believe was not of God. In a sense, the end of the world will finally “force” mankind to look on nature and know there is God. And the nature of God, to work in nature; is to create an effect that is in direct relation to a cause created by man apart from God: an “act of God” will follow the action of man.

The end of the earth will come after Satan has misguided mankind to destroy and bring to death the earth by fire. God will then act, in a moment, in the blink of an eye; by moving the earth from its place in creation and in the solar system. The miraculous, scientifically unexplainable movement will cause the earth to disintegrate.



The Sun – Mercury – Venus – Earth – Mars – Jupiter – Saturn – Uranus – Neptune – Pluto

In the beginning, God is the “actor” and not the reactor: in the sense that every action is followed by a reaction. When a loving and giving God chose to give mankind free-will—God allowed Himself to react to man rather than always initiate the action. There is no play on words when I write that man’s action will take place as a nuclear reactor or molecular reactor [in the final world war: Armageddon] initiates the shaking and destruction of the earth—and then God will react to man’s final destruction and shake the earth off of its axis and out of its orbit—thus ending the world for good.

Basically, nuclear war rocks the earth [or the next generation of fiery weapon of war; maybe the use of satellites or rocketry to catapult an asteroid or meteor to destroy a certain nation—The perspective here is not that a comet or asteroid strikes the earth “naturally” which is widely believed; instead, when the earth moves from its place, this is how the sun, moon, and stars will appear]. Scientifically, this may seismically cause the earth to move off of its axis. If it does, “scientifically,” that is still God allowing it to happen. And if it does not occur, “scientifically”; God, by His all-powerful hand, will move Earth out of orbit [as I believe]—first away from the sun, causing intense cold; and then closer to the sun causing intense heat and ultimately destruction. The truth of the matter is: God is just. If mankind wants to use fire to sinfully destroy one another—God will also use fire to bring to end mankind and mankind’s sinful actions. In the end, I personally believe Mars is repositioned closer to the sun, filling the space left by earth.

Revelation 6:12-14

Sixth Seal: Cosmic Disturbances

¹²I looked when He opened the sixth seal, and behold, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became like blood. ¹³And the stars of heaven fell to the earth, as a fig tree drops its late figs when it is shaken by a mighty wind. ¹⁴Then the sky receded as a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved out of its place.

CHAPTER: *End Times*
VERSION: *The End is Now*

†

**“I AM GOD...
THE SECOND YOU ARE BORN—
YOU ARE A DAY CLOSER TO DYING.”**

Mark my words...

The end of the world is coming and as the Bible and prophets have written—while only God knows the exact hour, we can all rest assured that it will in the next “give-or-take” 100 years.

CHAPTER: End Times

VERSION: Forgiveness—Repentance—Armageddon

†

**“I AM GOD...
IN THE END, YOU WILL ALL BE AT WAR;
AND IF YOU ARE LED BY THE SPIRIT OF ANTICHRIST
AND DO TAKE A LIFE—
YOU MUST HAVE TIME TO ASK ME FOR FORGIVENESS.
THAT IS WHY IT IS SO IMPORTANT TO TAKE NO
CHANCES THAT THERE WILL NOT BE TIME.
THEREFORE—DO NOT KILL—NOW.”**



“I AM GOD...”

1 John 2:1-29

The Test of Knowing Christ

¹My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. ²And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.

1 John 2:2—“...our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.” Jesus died for Christians and non-Christians—all the people of the world.

The Test of Knowing Him

³Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments.

1 John 2:3—We know Him by keeping His Commandments. Remember the two New Testament ones He gave. If you don’t keep them, you are a...

⁴He who says, “I know Him,” and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

1 John 2:4—...liar...again, follower of Satan or Antichrist. “I know Him” is not enough. Being a Christian, in other words, is not enough; “the truth is not in him.”

⁵But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him.

1 John 2:5—perfected...again, plus word, love and [truth] truly.

⁶He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked.

1 John 2:6—walk or live as He walked and lived—or die like He died. Live without killing.

⁷Brethren, I write no new commandment to you, but an old commandment which you have had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which you heard from the beginning. ⁸Again, a new commandment I write to you, which thing is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the true light is already shining. ⁹He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness until now.

1 John 2:9—hate leads to killing; that is darkness and evil.

¹⁰He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. ¹¹But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes.

1 John 2:11—“...darkness has blinded his eyes.” Like we read how Satan works to blind us.

Their Spiritual State

¹²I write to you, little children,

Because your sins are forgiven you for His name's sake.

¹³I write to you, fathers,

Because you have known Him who is from the beginning.

I write to you, young men,

Because you have overcome the wicked one.

I write to you, little children,

Because you have known the Father.

¹⁴I have written to you, fathers,

Because you have known Him who is from the beginning.

I have written to you, young men,

Because you are strong, and the word of God abides in you, And you have overcome the wicked one.

Do Not Love the World

¹⁵Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. ¹⁶For all that is in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life—is not of the Father but is of the world. ¹⁷And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.

Deceptions of the Last Hour

¹⁸Little children, it is the last hour; and as you have heard that the Antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have come, by which we know that it is the last hour. ¹⁹They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us; but they went out that they might be made manifest, that none of them were of us.

1 John 2:19—This verse coincides with John 6:66...The spirit of antichrist. “They went from us”: Christians, former disciples, all who oppose Jesus Christ’s teachings on life. Strongly, John almost disowns them, writing: “...that none of them were of us.”

²⁰But you have an anointing from the Holy One, and you know all things. ²¹I have not written to you because you do not know the truth, but because you know it, and that no lie is of the truth. ²²Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son. ²³Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either; he who acknowledges the Son has the Father also.

1 John 2:22—John doesn’t mean the Antichrist, as in one person, he means anyone who disbelieves Jesus is the Anointed One. This is the Antichrist. It is like saying, the one who scores the touchdown, this is the winner.

Let Truth Abide In You

²⁴Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in the Son and in the Father. ²⁵And this is the promise that He has promised us—eternal life.

²⁶These things I have written to you concerning those who try to deceive

you.²⁷ But the anointing which you have received from Him abides in you, and you do not need that anyone teach you; but as the same anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you will abide in Him.

The Children of God

²⁸ And now, little children, abide in Him, that when He appears, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming. ²⁹ If you know that He is righteous, you know that everyone who practices righteousness is born of Him.

CHAPTER: *End Times*

VERSION: *1 John Chapters 3, 4, and 5*



**“I AM GOD...
THIS BOOK, THIS LETTER, IS JOHN’S STATEMENT:
HIS PRAYER TO THE END.
ALL OF CHAPTER THREE SHOULD BE APPLIED TO LIFE.”**

1 John 3:1-24

The Command To Love

¹Behold what manner of love the Father has bestowed on us, that we should be called children of God! Therefore the world does not know us, because it did not know Him. ²Beloved, now we are children of God; and it has not yet been revealed what we shall be, but we know that when He is revealed, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is. ³And everyone who has this hope in Him purifies himself, just as He is pure.

Sin and the Child of God

⁴Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness. ⁵And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins, and in Him there is no sin. ⁶Whoever abides in Him does not sin. Whoever sins has neither seen Him nor known Him. ⁷Little children, let no one deceive you. He who practices righteousness is righteous, just as He is righteous. ⁸He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. ⁹Whoever has been born of God does not sin, for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God.

The Imperative of Love

¹⁰In this the children of God and the children of the devil are manifest: Whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is he who does not love his brother.

Mark my words...

1 John 3:10—It is right to love his brother. And not in any of these readings does brother mean disciple, or child of God, but brother means all human beings, regardless of their sinful beliefs or actions.

¹¹For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another, ¹²not as Cain who was of the wicked one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his works were evil and his brother's righteous.

1 John 3:12—Again, John mentions murder—this time: the first murder. “Because his works were evil...” Cain belonged to the evil one. And in Genesis, Moses writes that evil, sin, is a “demon lurking.”

¹³Do not marvel, my brethren, if the world hates you. ¹⁴We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love the brethren. He who does not love his brother abides in death.

1 John 3:14—John crosswords death, hate, and murder; with love and life.

¹⁵Whoever hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.

The Outworking Of Love

¹⁶By this we know love, because He laid down His life for us. And we also ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

1 John 3:16—He makes careful note of: “What would Jesus do?” He laid down His life, so we ought to do the same.

¹⁷But whoever has this world's goods, and sees his brother in need, and shuts up his heart from him, how does the love of God abide in him?

1 John 3:17—Who is in greater need than those who are being deceived and losing salvation?

¹⁸My little children, let us not love in word or in tongue, but in deed and in truth. ¹⁹And by this we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before Him. ²⁰For if our heart condemns us, God is greater than our heart, and knows all things. ²¹Beloved, if our heart does not condemn us, we have confidence toward God. ²²And whatever we ask we receive from Him, because we keep His commandments and do those things that are pleasing in His sight. ²³And this is His commandment: that we should believe on the name of His Son Jesus Christ and love one another, as He gave us commandment.

1 John 3:23—These words are the most powerful in one verse.

The Spirit of Truth and the Spirit of Error

²⁴Now he who keeps His commandments abides in Him, and He in him. And by this we know that He abides in us, by the Spirit whom He has given us.

1 John 3:24—Jesus spoke of this working of the Holy Spirit earlier.



“I AM GOD...”

1 John 4:1-21

Love For God and One Another

¹Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world.

Mark my words...

1 John 4:1—John matches the false prophet as the one who will tell you it is okay to kill.

²By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God,

1 John 4:2—“...come in the flesh...” not only the Son of God, but the importance of the human body—the life of the human body. If you kill a body—where can the Holy Spirit reside? You take away the opportunity and destroy it in two ways: the gift of life itself, and the housing for the Holy Spirit.

³and every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God. And this is the spirit of the Antichrist, which you have heard was coming, and is now already in the world.

⁴You are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because He who is in you is greater than he who is in the world. ⁵They are of the world. Therefore they speak as of the world, and the world hears them.

⁶We are of God. He who knows God hears us; he who is not of God does not hear us. By this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of error.

Knowing God through Love

⁷Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God. ⁸He who does not love does not know God, for God is love. ⁹In this the love of God was manifested toward us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him. ¹⁰In this is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins. ¹¹Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another.

Seeing God through Love

¹²No one has seen God at any time. If we love one another, God abides in us, and His love has been perfected in us.

1 John 4:12—Love is perfection.

¹³By this we know that we abide in Him, and He in us, because He has given us of His Spirit.

1 John 4:13—Where is the Holy Spirit going to reside if we don't correct sinners?

¹⁴And we have seen and testify that the Father has sent the Son as Savior of the world.

1 John 4:14—We kill the work of Jesus, who came to save. Who can He save if we kill?

¹⁵Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him, and he in God. ¹⁶And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him.

The Consummation of Love

¹⁷Love has been perfected among us in this: that we may have boldness in the day of judgment; because as He is, so are we in this world.

1 John 4:17—John alludes to a day of judgment when we are in this world. On the last day, this is how we are to be.

¹⁸There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves torment. But he who fears has not been made perfect in love.

1 John 4:18—Fear of death. Fear of losing our life is what drives man to kill, especially in defense against another life. Jesus always talked about “losing our life here.”

¹⁹We love Him because He first loved us.

Obedience by Faith

²⁰If someone says, “I love God,” and hates his brother, he is a liar; for he who does not love his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen? ²¹And this commandment we have from Him: that he who loves God must love his brother also.



“I AM GOD...”

1 John 5:1-21

Obedience by Faith

¹Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves Him who begot also loves him who is begotten of Him. ²By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep His commandments. ³For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome. ⁴For whatever is born of God overcomes the world. And this is the victory that has overcome the world—our faith. ⁵Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

The Certainty of God’s Witness

⁶This is He who came by water and blood—Jesus Christ; not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. ⁷For there are three that bear witness in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one. ⁸And there are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one. ⁹If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater; for this is the witness of God which He has testified of His Son. ¹⁰He who believes in the Son of God has the witness in himself; he who does not believe God has made Him a liar, because he has not believed the testimony that God has given of His Son. ¹¹And this is the testimony: that God has given us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. ¹²He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life. ¹³These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you

may know that you have eternal life, and that you may continue to believe in the name of the Son of God.

Confidence and Compassion in Prayer

¹⁴Now this is the confidence that we have in Him, that if we ask anything according to His will, He hears us. ¹⁵And if we know that He hears us, whatever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we have asked of Him.

¹⁶If anyone sees his brother sinning a sin which does not lead to death, he will ask, and He will give him life for those who commit sin not leading to death. There is sin leading to death. I do not say that he should pray about that.

Mark my words...

1 John 5:16—A deadly sin is the sin that leads unto death. Literally translated it says: “sin unto death.” I believe John is writing that we should pray for everyone who commits sin, but if a person is sinning—either, let’s say being killed by someone because of the killer’s sin or their own—that person is dead. There is nothing that can be changed once a person dies. In the last hour, the antichrist spirit, the final war, will cause much death. Pray for all who remain alive, that they may find life—life through the Son—but those dead apart from Jesus Christ are dead in sin, to Hell.

¹⁷All unrighteousness is sin, and there is sin not leading to death.

1 John 5:17—All unrighteousness or wrongdoing is sin: meaning murder is wrongdoing and not right.

Knowing the True—Rejecting the False

¹⁸We know that whoever is born of God does not sin; but he who has been born of God keeps himself, and the wicked one does not touch him.

1 John 5:18—If you don’t shoot back, or even pick-up a weapon in defense of your life—God will protect you—and Satan, the wicked one, or the wicked person following Satan; cannot, will not, harm you.

¹⁹We know that we are of God, and the whole world lies under the sway of the wicked one.

²⁰And we know that the Son of God has come and has given us an understanding, that we may know Him who is true; and we are in Him who is true, in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God and eternal life.

²¹Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

1 John 5:21—Be on guard against the Antichrist. Be on guard against a false god. Don't break the Commandment "...no other Gods before Me." There is no doubt why John was the disciple Jesus loved the most. This is why, John; in his love, understanding, belief and service to Jesus, wrote this letter. And most meaningfully, why Jesus gave John the Revelation; John would know what Jesus wants.



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

God’s energy design for the earth was not intended to be the burning of the very earth He created [oil, gas, etc.] Electricity may have done well, a middle compromise, but I haven’t thought that through or prayed on it, yet. But I do know that God created light first, it was man’s imperfect and sinful nature that had him first develop burning the earth [fire]. Remember, God created fire [on the sun] for man to use. [He didn’t create or place it here on earth, but fire on earth is being used as a perverted creation from Satan]. It is self-destructive to burn our own place. Think about it: eventually as evil, time and nature magnify; we’ll eventually set ourselves on fire [everything that burns becomes consumed and disintegrates—so too, the earth]. God warned us of the danger of fire. Hell is fire in the Scriptures. So our use of it will be for good or evil. A quick reference would be the oil-rich Arabs and Muslims, and how all those who follow false gods seem to possess all the oil-rich lands of the Middle East.

In other words...

Much of the world’s economic and political problems revolve around the battle for oil. More importantly, most of the world’s religious conflicts and spiritual battles do as well. In God’s perfect plan, from the beginning of civilization, He would have had us use and develop solar energy and wind energy—the last resource on earth He intended for us to use was oil and any of the byproducts and energy resources that come from our own soil. This pattern of energy use is unbelievably and deceptively self-destructive. There is energy in greater abundance in anything other than the earth. In fact, oil and its byproducts, God knows, are the least plentiful energy resource.

Spiritual warfare is the primary force in human existence. It is no evil coincidence that it is also encountered over the world’s energy demands. Let it be known that such warfare would have occurred regardless of all of man’s decisions following the sin of Adam and Eve. However, the world would be a less destructive place had man correctly followed God’s perfect energy plan.

CHAPTER: Entertainment

VERSION: “God has a sense of humor.” — (Ecclesiastes 2:2, 7:3)

†

“I AM GOD... NOT LIKE YOU THINK I DO.”

Ecclesiastes 2:2

**²I said of laughter—“Madness!”;
and of mirth, “What does it accomplish?”**

Ecclesiastes 7:3

**³Sorrow is better than laughter,
For by a sad countenance the heart is made better.**

Mark my words...

In the Bible, Jesus is not in entertainment. Jesus did not tell jokes.

In other words...

God is a good God. God is a God who “loves to laugh” not because of the laughter involved but because of the love. The reason why Jesus, the Creator of all joy [but not joy in the sense of the joy or laughter people get from being entertained, but the joy that comes from seeing people filled with the Holy Spirit and one with Jesus], did not tell a single joke in the Bible—is because 99.9% of every joke is based on a deception or told as a lie. Jesus could or would never, ever tell a lie. He could or would never even deceive in the slightest way.

CHAPTER: Entertainment

VERSION: In Hollywood, the “L” stands for “lie”—it should be “Holy-wood.”

†

**“I AM GOD...
ENTERTAINMENT IS THE GREAT, EVIL ADDICTION.
THE MORE ‘ENTERTAINING’ A CHURCH SERVICE—
THE LESS THERE IS THE SPIRIT OF HOLINESS.”**

Mark my words...

I’ve been in entertainment, and I know the difference.

CHAPTER: *Eternal Life*
VERSION: *Eternity*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Time flies by—people can die so quickly. It is this mortal feeling—and perception—that proves to me there is an eternity. The fact is: in the spectrum of eternity—life is a one-stop, point of existence—the minutest point of time or measurement in the theological and scientific realm.

CHAPTER: *Eternal Life*

VERSION: *The Person and Place of Jesus [Written On Easter 2002]*



**“I AM GOD...
ETERNAL LIFE IS THE PERSON AND PLACE OF JESUS...”**

Mark my words...

The Person

Imagine if there was no eternity, no Heaven, no person [God] who had all control to whom we would have to report.

In a minute, yes, that short a time, the world, the way we live our lives and the way we treat others, and all life; would be ultimate chaos. It would surely result in man's wholeheartedly committing sin. Man's own sinful nature would explode into the earth's nature and the destruction of all mankind.

The devil, Satan, just as he deceives and desires, and exists to have us not believe in the person of God [let alone, the Father Himself, but the actual person; just as we are human flesh, the actual person God, who is Jesus]; the devil would have us not believe in Jesus so we will eventually and immediately kill one another and die.

The human life would cease to exist. God's greatest creation would be gone...erased.

The Place

So, too, the devil would have us not believe in the power, importance, and creation of place. Earth is a place. Hell is a place. Heaven is a place. Where there are people, there is place. God created place even before He created people! The devil's work is to deny us the belief in our place; to destroy and bring to death people from their place.

The way Satan does it is strategic and deceptive. First, he tells us there is no Heaven. He also tells us there is no Hell. Of course, strategically this makes sense. But as the inventor of all lies and deceit, the trickery comes when he tempts us to believe this human existence, this life, in the place, is all there is; it all ends here; there is no eternity.

Everything, every breath of Satan's being leads to death and destruction, and Satan knows if we believe this—any of these three things—that people and place will cease to exist.

God is a person: Jesus. God created a place: that is Heaven. And God and His creations are as Himself: infinite, all-powerful, and eternal.

CHAPTER: *Eternal Life*

VERSION: *Eternal Sounds Like Enter and that's What We Do: We Enter [Another Life] —*
(John 17:1-5)



**“I AM GOD...
ALL LIFE IS ETERNAL LIFE.”**

John 17:1-5

Jesus Prays to God for His Disciples

¹Jesus spoke these words, lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said: “Father, the hour has come. Glorify Your Son, that Your Son also may glorify You, ²as You have given Him authority over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him. ³And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent. ⁴I have glorified You on the earth. I have finished the work which You have given Me to do. ⁵And now, O Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was.

Mark my words...

Jesus said, “eternal life.” There is only life and eternal life. Death is a deception of Satan to get people to not prepare for “eternal life.” Satan’s foremost goal is to have people deny their belief in Jesus: the eternal life promised through Christ. Satan wants us to die in this life and therefore die and lose “eternal life.” Man would be wise to keep his mind on the eternal nature of things and life, rather than continually reinforce his beliefs that this life is one unto itself. From man’s limited vision it is natural. From God’s point-of-view, He sees all time and life.

In other words...

The common misconception or misunderstanding is the belief that there is this earthly life and the life eternal. The truth of the matter is: all life is eternal. This life on earth is one minute segment in Eternal Life. Time began before we were born, and time will go on after these

earthly bodies perish. Like a snake, we will one day shed this skin, but there is only eternal life—there is no present life and the afterlife—life is only and always eternal.

CHAPTER: *Eternal Security*

VERSION: *Calling and Election — (2 Peter 1:1-11)*



“I AM GOD...”

2 Peter 1:1-11 {NIV}

¹Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, To those who through the righteousness of our God and Savior Jesus Christ have received a faith as precious as ours: ²Grace and peace be yours in abundance through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.

Mark my words...

Peter is a servant of Christ's....Christ said He was a servant of God's and of mankind's....And both Jesus and Peter have told us that the righteousness of Jesus, and “right” relationship with The Savior; is achieved by faith, grace, and knowledge. We know what faith is and who to have our faith in... We know what grace is, and whose grace we need to reach Heaven....And we even know who Jesus is—but what knowledge could we learn? Read on...

Making One's Calling and Election Sure

³His divine power has given us everything we need for life and godliness through our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness.

God's divine power comes from our belief in the work of Jesus Christ as a servant to mankind and as a sacrifice to God. If we want life, eternal life, and godliness, to be made like God to be one with God, through our knowledge of His Son Jesus and knowing the Word and nature of God; we are called, by the nature of God, the Word of God and the Son of God, to be in His glory and in Heaven where God began the creation of all that was good.

⁴Through these he has given us his very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.

The divine nature is the natural and supernatural nature of the Holy Spirit; and the Holy Spirit living inside of us will keep our bodies and souls from a destructive life in a natural, sinful world and the eternal life in Hell.

⁵For this very reason, make every effort to add to your faith goodness; and to goodness, knowledge; ⁶and to knowledge, self-control; and to self-control, perseverance; and to perseverance, godliness; ⁷and to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, love.

Read and see the pattern Peter uses here: it is by faith in God we are saved. Add to such faith: goodness [all of creation began in goodness, for after all of creation, God said: “it was good”]—and to goodness, knowledge [the first temptation was to destroy our knowledge; the knowledge we need to have is the knowledge of God and how He chose to work with us and save us through His Son, Jesus]. From knowledge, we need to have self-control [which means we have to keep our “spirit-man” disciplined or maintain ourselves as a disciple of Christ]. To self-control, we must persevere [this means it is an unending battle and growth, in the spiritual war for our bodies and souls that we keep The Spirit of God within us]—and to perseverance we add godliness [which is to say, if we keep in the presence and power of the Holy Spirit, we will continue to be one with God; both in person and place]. And to godliness, brotherly kindness [Jesus told us the two great Commandments were to love God and love our brother]. So it is our godliness or love for God, that will be revealed and accomplished through the love we have and kindness we show to our brother. As it began, so shall it end...in love. God created man because of his love for man. Jesus died because of His love for man. And if we follow the pattern of the life of Jesus, and read the Word of God—so too, shall we find ourselves where we began: with the Creator in love.

⁸For if you possess these qualities in increasing measure, they will keep you from being ineffective and unproductive in your knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

If we “possess”; this signifies or infers we can have or be “possessed” by something—in “increasing measure” means we must continue our spiritual growth. Once we receive the Holy Spirit, we must choose to grow into He who is within us. If we don’t, we surely will die. And if we are “ineffective” and “unproductive” in our knowledge of Christ—we will be unsuccessful and unable to reach the Heavenly Home of Jesus Christ.

⁹But if anyone does not have them, he is nearsighted and blind, and has forgotten that he has been cleansed from his past sins.

“If you don’t have them”: the foremost quality of Christ is the Holy Spirit of God. If we don’t have The Spirit, we are of Satan who is the master of death, deceit and spiritual blindness. And essentially, we will have “forgotten” the meaning and purpose of the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ, The Lord, for our Spirit-filled, sin-free state that allows eternal life with God in Heaven.

¹⁰Therefore, my brothers, be all the more eager to make your calling and election sure. For if you do these things, you will never fall, ¹¹and you will receive a rich welcome into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

Peter could not say it more clearly—we can lose our salvation—we can lose our eternal security. Be forewarned; make the work Jesus did for us, “sure,” by the working of the Holy Spirit within us. If we do not make our “calling and election” [God’s choice, longing, and willingness to save us to be with Him]; if we are not eager [and willing] to make our homecoming “sure”; if we do not have the Holy Spirit [whether we never had Him or lose Him]; we will not get into Heaven.



“I AM GOD...”

Matthew 25:1-13

The Parable of the Wise and Foolish Virgins
The Return of Christ in Judgment

¹“Then the kingdom of heaven shall be likened to ten virgins who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. ²Now five of them were wise, and five were foolish. ³Those who were foolish took their lamps and took no oil with them, ⁴but the wise took oil [the Holy Spirit] in their vessels [Bodies] with their lamps. ⁵But while the bridegroom [Jesus] was delayed, they all slumbered and slept.

Mark my words...

Just as the disciples slept in the garden—before Jesus made His way to the cross of our salvation—Christians can lie asleep in what I’ll call a state of “lazy grace.” As well, in resting on the notion of having a guarantee of eternal salvation or in banking on “knowing” they are “saved”; is only a guarantee that can cost you your life.

⁶“And at midnight a cry was heard: “Behold, the bridegroom is coming; go out to meet him!” ⁷Then all those virgins arose and trimmed their lamps. ⁸And the foolish said to the wise, “Give us some of your oil, for our lamps are going out.”

In other words...

Our lamps are losing their light—our bodies are losing the Holy Spirit within us. While Jesus, the bridegroom, is on His way [His second coming]; some of those awaiting Him were losing their way. As for eternal salvation, the condition of their spiritual body is the way “in”—and it may be lost.

⁹But the wise answered, saying, “No, lest there should not be enough for us and you; but go rather to those who sell, and buy for yourselves.’

¹⁰And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and those who were ready [*“...those who were ready”*—again, this marks a continuing process—a time and place when a condition was met: a spiritual condition. It is the time and place when the Holy Spirit is with you and in you.] **went in with him to the wedding; and the door was shut.**

¹¹“Afterward the other virgins came also, saying, “Lord, Lord, open to us!” ¹²But he answered and said, “Assuredly, I say to you, I do not know you.’ [Ask yourself: What on earth do you think you could say to God in Heaven that will get you in? Rather, it is being filled with the Holy Spirit—it is that indwelling that will get you an invitation that has been Heaven sent. In the presence of Jesus—the presence of His Holy Spirit will “do all the talking.” Recall the words of The Lord when He told a man how to handle himself in the presence of the judge or at a judgment—the same godly principle is at work here: **(Mark 13:11) But when they arrest you and deliver you up, do not worry beforehand what you will speak. But whatever is given you in that hour, speak that; for it is not you who speak, but the Holy Spirit.** Rest assured in knowing: God’s grace is not having to speak for yourself at The Judgment.]

¹³“Watch therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour in which the Son of Man is coming.

The last word is...

Jesus, the Holy Spirit, the disciples, and the writers of the Bible; understand the timeliness and timelessness of reminding man that he is only one day away from death. This life and eternal life are truly a heartbeat away. And from generation-to-generation, until the time of the end, all who read the Holy Scriptures can come to understand the temporary nature of this life and the everlasting nature of the Word of God.

CHAPTER: *Eternal Security*
VERSION: *Matthew 12:43-45*



**“I AM GOD...
ETERNAL: YES. SECURE: NO.”**

Matthew 12:43-45

An Unclean Spirit Returns

⁴³“When an unclean spirit goes out of a man, he goes through dry places, seeking rest, and finds none. ⁴⁴Then he says, “I will return to my house from which I came.’ And when he comes, he finds it empty, swept, and put in order. ⁴⁵Then he goes and takes with him seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter and dwell there; and the last state of that man is worse than the first. So shall it also be with this wicked generation.”

Mark my words...

This records that spirit possession; mind you, both good [the Holy Spirit] and evil [Satanic demons], is more of an ever-changing condition than it is a permanent state-of-being. This again goes to prove that there is no “eternal security” apart from the immediate presence of the Holy Spirit.

As noted, [In the CHAPTER: Spirit Possession, VERSION: “Satan be gone!”], Jesus knew this all-to-well and that is why He spent so much time healing and saving those with demons.

In other words...

Protection and security work hand-in-hand. If we are protected—we are secure. If God can remove His protection [and He can]—then we can take away our security.



**“I AM GOD...
YOU CAN LOSE YOUR SALVATION.”**

Salvation Principle

Mark my words...

Salvation has been offered by God. Salvation is always offered by God. Salvation will always be offered by God.

Those who wrongfully teach that a person cannot lose their salvation or eternal security, in all honesty, are missing the point and principle on all “salvation” or “eternal security” teachings. Every Scripture in the Bible that is misinterpreted on this subject points to one error: while salvation will always be available—it is available as a principle of God’s. It is God’s very nature to eternally love, accept, and prepare a place for His creation. But it is also the nature of God to allow man the free-will choice of evil or good; the choice of death or life; the choice of accepting or rejecting His Son Jesus; and the choice of Satan or the choice of the Holy Spirit.

Salvation, while always a gift from an eternally-loving Father—is always a choice for man to make for God—not for God to make for man.

The Bible clearly states that no one; no devil, no evil, no power, no man, nothing can erase salvation. True. There is always salvation, but that is not to say, everyone will get it.

In other words...

It is not as if God is going to lock the doors to Heaven and declare no one can ever get in: “That’s it—there is no more Heaven—the only place you can go is Hell. You’re all going to Hell.” Now, if some people are saved, and some lost, as it is clearly understood in the Biblical teachings of Jesus—if some people are saved and some never get saved—it stands to reason that some people may gain it and some people may lose it. It never changes the fact that salvation or

eternal life with God exists—but it does not say that everyone is guaranteed to accept and/or receive it.

Read in Scripture, and imagine in the life of Jesus, how many times He removed and indwelt (or promised to indwell, like the disciples concerning the coming of the Holy Spirit) people with spirit. Everywhere you look in Scripture, Jesus is removing demonic spirits from people. And once the spirit of evil is removed, the healed are compelled to follow Jesus. A perfect example of the destructive nature of demon possession comes from Mark 5:11-13.

¹¹Now a large herd of swine was feeding there near the mountains. ¹²So all the demons begged Him, saying, “Send us to the swine, that we may enter them.” ¹³And at once Jesus gave them permission. Then the unclean spirits went out and entered the swine (there were about two thousand); and the herd ran violently down the steep place into the sea and drowned in the sea.

In this passage, note the first thing that happens to the swine once they are possessed with the evil spirits: they go and kill themselves. Satan is the father of murder, death and destruction. He tries to kill every creature, man and beast, in this life and in the next life. God knows with evil in the world, all man is self-destructive and heading for death. Jesus knows the importance and everlasting condition of the spiritual body.

My last words...

Remember, God is Spirit. He created us as Spirit. And when we die, our true spirit will be revealed to Him. Is your spirit the spirit of Satan or the Holy Spirit?

CHAPTER: *Eternal Security*

VERSION: *Part 2— “In Spirit” Vs. “Out of Spirit”*

“In Spirit” vs. “Out of Spirit”

Mark my words...

When I am living a sin-free, fruitful, Christ-like life; when I am “in The Spirit,” I am comfortable and at perfect peace with believing that my salvation can be lost. Also, I feel a real conviction that those who preach and teach a message guaranteeing my eternal salvation are misleading me.

In other words...

When I am sinning repeatedly, feeling lost, and “out of The Spirit”—I either have no interest if I’m saved; plus, I often feel hopeless and helpless [certainly not the condition or view God would have on me or want me to have]. Also, I often don’t know and have confusion on what I believe about eternal security. And if I do lean toward a belief, I tend to believe I can’t lose it; that regardless of my sin, I’m “in.”

CHAPTER: *Eternal Security*

VERSION: *Part 3— My Faith Is Greater When I Think I Can Lose My Salvation*

My Faith Is Greater When I Think I Can Lose My Salvation.

Mark my words...

When I feel I can lose my salvation, and that my eternal security is dependent on the spiritual condition of my body, mind, heart and soul at the time of my death—this thought gives me greater faith in Christ knowing that I have the choice on whether to keep myself alive in the Holy Spirit or lose the Holy Spirit to sinfulness and evil. The fact that God can allow me to lose my spiritual and eternal place with Him, compels me to have a greater faith in Him and less faith in myself of any assurance I believe I have. If the soul decision on my salvation rests with God's decision and not my own—and when I die, only He knows for certain the truth of my salvation—I have almost no choice but to simply trust in God that He knows if I am “in.”

In other words...

It almost “forces” me to put more faith in God. This gives me the greatest faith.

CHAPTER: *Eternal Security*

VERSION: *Part 4— The Pride of Life*

The Pride of Life

Mark my words...

The Bible records Jesus saying, “no man knows what is in another man’s heart.” Well, I am a man; who is to say I know if I’m saved? I believe it would be prideful and self-serving to believe my eternal condition could be “set in stone” at a singular defining moment during my life.

In other words...

If the sun stops shining, a plant stops growing. And it has been said, if a creation stops its growing—it starts dying. I know there are seasons to reap and sow; to live and to defeat the seasons in the growth of created plant life can change, so too can the seasons in my spiritual and created life.

CHAPTER: *Eternal Security*

VERSION: *Part 5— Eternal Truth or Consequences*

Eternal Truth or Consequences

Mark my words...

What if I believe I am eternally secure and I am not? If I am wrong—if there is something I haven't done, learned, or accepted: I am going to Hell.

What if I am wrong in misunderstanding the principle of eternal security? What happens when I die: I go to Hell.

What if I think I am accepted by Jesus and the acceptance I lived my life thinking I had, I don't have or never had? When I die: I am going to Hell.

In other words...

Believing that my salvation or eternal security is totally in the hands of Jesus, extends the grace He provides me beyond measure and [ironically] guarantees me security. In a sense, if there is no eternal security, if I can lose my salvation by losing the Holy Spirit and Christian life in me—I know I will assuredly be with Him in Heaven and suffer no loss or punishment, or worse, banishment, for having such a self-assurance that once “I received Him” I was somehow automatically “in.”

In other words...

The truth is: If I'm wrong down here [on earth] I have nothing to lose—but if I am wrong up there, then the consequences are eternal.

CHAPTER: *Eternal Security*

VERSION: *Losing the Holy Spirit and Eternal Security*



“I AM GOD...”

Matthew 24:1-51

*Jesus Predicts the Destruction of the Temple
Destruction of the Temple Foretold*

¹Then Jesus went out and departed from the temple, and His disciples came up to show Him the buildings of the temple. ²And Jesus said to them, “Do you not see all these things? Assuredly, I say to you, not one stone shall be left here upon another, that shall not be thrown down.”

Mark my words...

This is not only a temple or a building; but it is symbolic of the building that is a person's body, the temple for which the Holy Spirit is to reside.

The Signs of the Times and the End of the Age

³Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, “Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?”

⁴And Jesus answered and said to them: “Take heed that no one deceives you. ⁵For many will come in My name, saying, “I am the Christ,’ and will deceive many.

Jesus is not necessarily speaking about a person who says he is the Christ, but people who say they are “Christians.” And He warns they will falsely teach and lead others. These “Christians” will say they come in His name, as a “Christian”; but their deceitful and murderous ways will be indicative of the devil and not of God.

⁶And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars. See that you are not troubled; for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. ⁷For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in various places. ⁸All these are the beginning of sorrows.

⁹“Then they will deliver you up to tribulation and kill you, and you will be hated by all nations for My name’s sake. ¹⁰And then many will be offended, will betray one another, and will hate one another. ¹¹Then many false prophets will rise up and deceive many. ¹²And because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will grow cold.

God is love. God is Spirit. God is Spirit and love. Note the many underlined words and see how opposite they are from love—and if they are opposed to love—then they must be from God’s opposition. God’s opposition is the devil.

If you love your neighbor and love your enemy—then you know God. And in Heaven, God knows you. If you love a life more than your own—and you are willing to sacrifice your own life—then you did just as Jesus did. If you do not love the life of your neighbor or enemy—then you must hate life—and therefore, you are not doing as Jesus would do.

And since God is also Spirit—relate the passage to the importance of the human spirit—and more meaningfully, the spiritual condition of a person. If the spirit of God is not present; then who’s spirit is present and at work? The evil spirit must be present. The evil spirit is Satan.

If you are not in possession of the Holy Spirit—you are possessed by the devil. If you are in possession of the devil—you will be with the devil. The devil will be in Hell—so too, you will be in Hell—end of story.

¹³**But he who endures to the end shall be saved.**

These words by The Savior indicate that your salvation is not an eternal guarantee. To “endure” means that there is a path to follow and not just a point to stop at. There is a continual move, or in this case growth, which leads to “the end” and being “saved.”

¹⁴**And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all the nations, and then the end will come.**

The Great Tribulation

¹⁵“Therefore when you see the ‘abomination of desolation,’ spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place” (whoever reads, let him understand), ¹⁶“then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains.

¹⁷Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take anything out of his house. ¹⁸And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes.

¹⁹But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! ²⁰And pray that your flight may not be in winter or on the Sabbath. ²¹For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world until this time, no, nor ever shall be. ²²And unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect’s sake those days will be shortened.

²³“Then if anyone says to you, ‘Look, here is the Christ!’ or ‘There!’ do not believe it. ²⁴For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. ²⁵See, I have told you beforehand.

²⁶“Therefore if they say to you, ‘Look, He is in the desert!’ do not go out; or ‘Look, He is in the inner rooms!’ do not believe it. ²⁷For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. ²⁸For wherever the carcass is, there the eagles will be gathered together.

The Coming of the Son of Man

²⁹“Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. ³⁰Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. ³¹And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

The Parable of the Fig Tree

³²“Now learn this parable from the fig tree: When its branch has already become tender and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is near. ³³So you also, when you see all these things, know that it is near—at the doors! ³⁴Assuredly, I say to you, this generation will by no means pass

away till all these things take place. ³⁵Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will by no means pass away.

No One Knows the Day or Hour

³⁶“But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, but My Father only. ³⁷But as the days of Noah were, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. ³⁸For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, ³⁹and did not know until the flood came and took them all away, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. ⁴⁰Then two men will be in the field: one will be taken and the other left. ⁴¹Two women will be grinding at the mill: one will be taken and the other left. ⁴²Watch therefore, for you do not know what hour your Lord is coming. ⁴³But know this, that if the master of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched and not allowed his house to be broken into. ⁴⁴Therefore you also be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an hour you do not expect.

The Faithful Servant and the Evil Servant

⁴⁵“Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his master made ruler over his household [*human body*], to give them food in due season?

Food is the “bread of life.” Without food, man would die. Food is symbolic for eternal life.

⁴⁶Blessed is that servant whom his master, when he comes, will find so doing.

To “find so doing”; is indicative of an action or a doing of something. This works in relation to a person’s possession or indwelling of the Holy Spirit, it does not relate to a guarantee of a grace-filled salvation once received that may never be lost.

⁴⁷Assuredly, I say to you that he will make him ruler over all his goods.

⁴⁸But if that evil servant [*Notice Jesus doesn’t “beat around the bush.” The unfaithful servant is not just disobedient, mistaken or deceived; that person is downright evil. If you are not holy and good, you are unholy and evil.*] says in his heart, “My master is delaying his coming,” ⁴⁹and begins to beat his fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunkards,

These two evils: beating [“beating” alludes to anger, war, and murder]; and drunkenness [drunkenness alludes to all matters contained in an evil spirit]; truthfully, they both equate to all evil and sin, period.

⁵⁰the master of that servant will come on a day when he is not looking for him and at an hour that he is not aware of,

Jesus will come either at His second coming or when you [as a human] die. And at Jesus’ second coming, He comes on a day unknown by all, and of all the days in the history of existence—this one day seems by human nature, so minute, that not only will man not see it coming—he may miss most of it while he is sleeping. Secondly, human death, from the day of birth—is only a heartbeat away. From the day of our birth, we are forever a day closer to dying.

⁵¹and will cut him in two and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Jesus makes a revealing statement here, He does not immediately say the evil servants are appointed to the devil. He says the deceived sinner will make his place with the “hypocrites.” These hypocrites are the “Christians” who are not truly following The Lord. They may say they are Christians and may “act” like Christians, but they will not possess the Holy Spirit. In addition, their deeds will be deceitful and murderous. And the place the hypocrites are going is the same place as all sinners, evil spirits, Anti-Christians and Satan himself will go: Hell—where “there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth”—they are going to Hell.

As Jesus would say: “for those who have ears let them hear”: Those deceitful, murderous, and satanic “Christians” who lead and teach that war and killing is the will of God or the “just and righteous” thing to do are lying and going to Hell—believe me.

*Notice how all these aforementioned paragraphs: [**Destruction of the Temple Foretold—The Signs of the Times and the End of the Age—The Great Tribulation—The Coming of the Son of Man—The Parable of the Fig Tree—No One Knows the Day or Hour—The Faithful Servant and the Evil Servant**] address the end times—the last great battle—the battles that have led to the spiritual war between good and evil. The timeline Jesus addresses about the end of the world: the end of life. In regard to eternal security, He does not speak about the singular point in time when a person is “saved.” Like the world, and life as we know it, Jesus does not put the greater importance on the minutes totaling an hour—as He does what happens in the final hour and at the last minute. You see, the condition of a person’s spirit is the sole thing that Jesus cares about. While the world is in constant spiritual warfare, so too, is a person at war within their own body as they maintain a personal relationship with Jesus Christ.*

The truth of the matter is: a person will never know they are saved—until the end of their days when and if Jesus actually does save them. If you want to see what spiritual condition your spiritual condition is in: wait till you see God eye-to-eye—He'll let you know. In the meantime, grow in love and the Holy Spirit and have faith in Jesus. Have faith that His judgment of your spiritual condition at the time of your death, or at His second coming, will make you acceptable to Him. Until that time, rest in the peace of knowing that Jesus knows if you are “saved.”

In other words...

I don't need to know—I don't want to know—all I know...is God knows.

My last words...

Trust Jesus. Just trust Jesus.

CHAPTER: *Evil*

VERSION: *Why Does God Allow Evil?*

†

**“I AM GOD...
I DON’T IN HEAVEN.”**

Mark my words...

Charles Colson, who has been around much evil through his Prison Fellowship Ministry gives the valid explanation:

“The simple answer to why bad things happen to so-called good people is that God loved us so much that He made us free moral agents in his image. He designed us with the ability to make choices—to choose either good or evil. The original humans, Adam and Eve exercised that choice—and chose to disobey God. In doing so, they rejected God’s good, thus creating sin and opening the door to evil and death.

Sure, God could have erased the consequences of sin. But then we would no longer be free moral agents; we would be robots. For without consequences, there is no real choice. God cannot simultaneously offer us free choice and then compel one choice over another—which is what would happen if He stepped in to stop all evil.”

CHAPTER: *Forgiveness*
VERSION: *"Forgive..."*

†

**"I AM GOD...
NO ONE IN SCRIPTURES SAID:
'I AM SORRY, JESUS'—BUT AFTER HIS DEATH—
LOOK HOW MANY ARE SAYING IT NOW."**

Mark my words...

Anyone who does not accept forgiveness denies the work and nature of Jesus and His very existence. It is Satan, the deceiver, who tells people their sins cannot or are not forgiven. If you believe in Jesus—you need to believe Jesus forgives.

CHAPTER: Forgiveness

VERSION: Righteous Vs. Forgiven



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

It truly takes a sinner, one who needs and knows the gift of God's forgiveness; to be blessed and able to give forgiveness freely. This is partly why Jesus came to earth as a man: to adopt the sinfulness of humankind. Although He never sinned Himself, He did bear all of mankind's sin: the sinful nature that separated man from God the Father.

In other words...

Blessed are those who commit few sins that they know not the value of forgiveness. Jesus, He knew more about sin, and being a sinner, than any one of us. As a matter of fact, Jesus, in a sense, was the greatest sinner who ever lived: for you see, Jesus knew all of our sins. And He, The Savior, died taking with Him the sins of all of us.

CHAPTER: *Forgiveness*
VERSION: "...them..."



**"I AM GOD...
WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT,
THERE IS NO SIN THAT JESUS WILL NOT FORGIVE."**

Mark my words...

Jesus saw a sinful, unsaved thief on a cross. And Jesus loved that man so much that He hung, dying next to him, and asked the Father to forgive the thief. Then, Jesus died for the thief and took him to Heaven.

In other words...

If we don't forgive the thieves and murderers—then we stop following Jesus to the cross—just as the first disciples literally stopped following Him. We choose to reject Jesus. And worse yet, the disciples did that when they only thought Jesus was dying [and not rising]. We, today, have believed and seen Jesus has risen—and yet, how can we reject the forgiveness that He offered that thief and gave to us?

CHAPTER: Forgiveness
VERSION: "...Father..."

†

**"I AM GOD...
CONFESSING YOUR SIN IS NOT A CRIME—
BUT NOT CONFESSING YOUR SIN IS A SIN."**

CHAPTER: Forgiveness

VERSION: "...they know not what they do."

†

**"I AM GOD...
MY SON SAID: 'FORGIVE THEM FATHER;
THEY KNOW NOT WHAT THEY DO.'
JESUS DIED AND WAS KILLED TO FORGIVE YOU OF YOUR
SIN
AND MAKE YOU ACCEPTABLE BEFORE ME.
IF A MAN COMMITS THE GREATEST ACT OF BEING
UNFORGIVING KNOWN TO MAN—THE TAKING OF
ANOTHER MAN'S LIFE—FROM MY VIEWPOINT, THE
KILLER DOES NOT ACCEPT THE DEATH OF MY SON, JESUS.
AND IF YOU DO NOT ACCEPT THE DEATH OF JESUS,
YOU ARE DAMNED IN HELL FOR ETERNITY."**

Mark my words...

Also, when Jesus said: "Forgive them Father; they know not what they do." He was not only saying this with regards to a man taking another man's life—in this case, the life of the man, Jesus; but also, the Son of God was still continuing to ask God the Father to forgive man for all the sins, from the fall of Adam and Eve to the end of creation, that man is stained with, guilty of, or committing against a Holy God [thus making mankind unholy and eternally separating him from God].

Jesus knows if you do not have God's forgiveness, if you are not made holy, you will die in eternal damnation and death, rather than with God, in Heaven, for the eternity of life. And again, if a man does not accept the death of Jesus, you will not be forgiven of your sins; for through the life and death of Jesus, all forgiveness is given to man.

Lastly, we are to forgive each other for our sins. Jesus Himself said, "If you do not forgive each other, God will not forgive you." For one, Jesus knows that forgiveness is a spiritual act. And if forgiveness is not present, then neither is the Holy Spirit; and if the Holy Spirit is not present, a

person is damned. As well, if we don't forgive one another, we don't do as Jesus did. And if we don't do what Jesus does, we are actually saying we don't believe Jesus. And if we don't believe the words and teachings of Jesus, we basically don't believe in Jesus. And if we don't believe in Jesus; in a sense, we believe His death was meaningless and we don't believe Jesus died for our sins. And if we don't believe Jesus died for our sins, we are right back to being sinners and are therefore unrighteous and unholy. In that case, we are doomed to eternal destruction, death, and Hell for evermore.

In other words...

- Taking a man's life does not offer him the chance for forgiveness.
- Since Jesus was a man, to take another man's life; we might well have taken the life of Jesus.
- If we don't have the forgiveness of Jesus Christ, then Jesus will not let us sinners enter Heaven.
- If we don't forgive others, Jesus will not forgive us.
- Forgiveness is a spiritual act—and without the Holy Spirit, we are damned.



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

After a career-ending injury, former major league baseball pitcher Frank Pastore “hit a homerun” with his statement on the subject of free-will and freedom:

“God is not the source of evil. God takes evil events and the choices and the consequences we have. And He invites you to turn them to good, or He’ll intervene and turn them to good. It’s a greater God that will allow human freedom and evil and bring good out of it, than the God that doesn’t allow any freedom at all. God chose to intervene in that event and I’m very grateful or I most likely would have destroyed my life. Because I had adopted a world view and a strategy for living that focused on pleasure and success. Well, my career over, there goes the success and its terribly destructive to only seek pleasure. And so, I thank God, that’s almost a slogan, but I thank God for intervening in my life at a point in which I could easily have gone in a destructive direction and now I can see Him using me and others to influence lives and invite them to have their lives changed as well and adopt a better strategy for having a meaningful life. And Jesus offers every person this invitation into His Kingdom. But He doesn’t push it on people. As He spoke in the parable: ‘Let him who has ears hear ...’

“Meantime, I give you a way out if you don’t want to hear; I’ll respect your freedom. But, if you’re in the pursuit of truth and reality, you feel empty and you’re looking for more, you’re trying to make sense of things; I have some suggestions”; and He’s got a very gentle voice when does so.”

CHAPTER: *Giving*

VERSION: *"The gift that keeps on giving."*



**"I AM GOD...
GIVE PRAYER AND THOUGHT TO ONE ANOTHER—
THEN THE SPIRIT YOU SOUGHT FOR ANOTHER
WILL SEEK YOU OUT."**

Mark my words...

Giving also means giving your thoughts and prayer life for another.

In other words...

If you are feeling far from God, and that God is keeping you in need; the best thing to do is to give all you've got....If you give in prayer and thought, the Holy Spirit will give you a Word or thought for your intended. Then you may draw upon [and be filled with The Spirit] that you sought for another.

CHAPTER: God

VERSION: Love — (1 John 4:8, 1 John 4:16)



**“I AM GOD...
I AM LOVE.”**

Mark my words...

The Bible records the words of the disciple John:

1 John 4:8

⁸He who does not love does not know God, for God is love.

1 John 4:16

¹⁶And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him.

In other words...

God is love and everything man does must include love.

In the way man relates to mankind, man must do so with love in his mind.

In the way man relates to mankind, man must do so with love in his heart.

In the way man relates to mankind, man must do so with love in his body.

In the way man relates to mankind, man must do so with love in his soul.

By example—if a person sins against another person, how does the victim love the sinner? How did Jesus love the sinner? You love the sinner by forgiving and serving the sinner. If a person is blessed by another person, how does the receiver love the giver? How did Jesus love the giver? You love the giver, by thanking the giver and giving in return. You love people the way Jesus did—by example.

CHAPTER: God

VERSION: Spirit — (John 4:24)



**“I AM GOD...
I AM SPIRIT.”**

Mark my words...

The Bible records the words of the disciple John:

John 4:24

²⁴“God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth.”

In other words...

God is Spirit and everything man does must be spiritual.

In the way man relates to mankind, man must do so spiritually in his mind.

In the way man relates to mankind, man must do so spiritually in his heart.

In the way man relates to mankind, man must do so spiritually in his body.

In the way man relates to mankind, man must do so spiritually in his soul.

By example—in the way a person walks, how can they walk spiritually? You walk spiritually believing you are Christ-like in every step you take. You walk spiritually living your life as if you were Jesus. In the way a person talks, how can they talk spiritually? You talk spiritually, by talking as Jesus would, with every word that comes from His mouth recorded in the Bible. You talk spiritually by speaking as Jesus would, through prayer. You live spiritually the way Jesus did—by example.

CHAPTER: Good News and Bad News

VERSION: Dear People...

Mark my words...

Life and death are on the minds of men...and of God.

And according to the Word of God: the Holy Bible—life and death; and the eternal past, present, and future are in the following words:

†

**“I AM GOD...
I’VE GOT GOOD NEWS AND BAD NEWS...
AND THEY ARE BOTH THE SAME:
THIS WORLD IS COMING TO AN END—
AND JESUS IS COMING AGAIN!”**



**“I AM GOD...
I HAVE 13 RULES FOR THE GOVERNMENT OF THE EARTH.”**

“1. I AM GOD. I AM THE GOVERNMENT.”

Isaiah 9:6 {KJV}

⁶For unto us a Child is born,
Unto us a Son is given;
And the government will be upon His shoulder.
And His name will be called
Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God,
Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace.

Isaiah 9:7 {KJV}

⁷Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even forever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

Isaiah 22:21 {KJV}

²¹And I will clothe him with thy robe, and strengthen him with thy girdle, and I will commit thy government into his hand: and he shall be a father to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and to the house of Judah.

1 Corinthians 12:28 {KJV}

²⁸And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

2 Peter 2:10 {KJV}

¹⁰But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.

“2. FOLLOW MY COMMANDMENTS.”

Exodus 20 {KJV}

- ¹ And God spake all these words, saying,
- ² I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.
- ³ Thou shalt have no other gods before me.
- ⁴ Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth.
- ⁵ Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;
- ⁶ And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.
- ⁷ Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.
- ⁸ Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy.
- ⁹ Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work:
- ¹⁰ But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates:
- ¹¹ For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.
- ¹² Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.
- ¹³ Thou shalt not kill.
- ¹⁴ Thou shalt not commit adultery.
- ¹⁵ Thou shalt not steal.
- ¹⁶ Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.
- ¹⁷ Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox,

nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's.

¹⁸ And all the people saw the thunderings, and the lightnings, and the noise of the trumpet, and the mountain smoking: and when the people saw it, they removed, and stood afar off.

¹⁹ And they said unto Moses, Speak thou with us, and we will hear: but let not God speak with us, lest we die.

²⁰ And Moses said unto the people, Fear not: for God is come to prove you, and that his fear may be before your faces, that ye sin not.

²¹ And the people stood afar off, and Moses drew near unto the thick darkness where God was.

²² And the LORD said unto Moses, Thus thou shalt say unto the children of Israel, Ye have seen that I have talked with you from heaven.

²³ Ye shall not make with me gods of silver, neither shall ye make unto you gods of gold.

²⁴ An altar of earth thou shalt make unto me, and shalt sacrifice thereon thy burnt offerings, and thy peace offerings, thy sheep, and thine oxen: in all places where I record my name I will come unto thee, and I will bless thee.

²⁵ And if thou wilt make me an altar of stone, thou shalt not build it of hewn stone: for if thou lift up thy tool upon it, thou hast polluted it.

²⁶ Neither shalt thou go up by steps unto mine altar, that thy nakedness be not discovered thereon.

Mark 12:29-31 {KJV}

²⁹ And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord:

³⁰ And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.

³¹ And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.

Mark my words...

These are all that matter.



**“I AM GOD...
I AM THE KING. I RULE A ‘MONARCHY.’”**

Isaiah 1:4 {KJV}

⁴Ah sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a seed of evildoers, children that are corrupters: they have forsaken the LORD, they have provoked the Holy One of Israel unto anger, they are gone away backward.

Jeremiah 4:22 {KJV}

²²For my people is foolish, they have not known me; they are sottish children, and they have none understanding: they are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge.

Jeremiah 5:25-27 {KJV}

²⁵Your iniquities have turned away these things, and your sins have withholden good things from you.

²⁶For among my people are found wicked men: they lay wait, as he that setteth snares; they set a trap, they catch men.

²⁷As a cage is full of birds, so are their houses full of deceit: therefore they are become great, and waxen rich.

Mark my words...

People cannot rule themselves as God would. God’s rule over the earth was and is a monarchy. His Son Jesus was and is The King of Kings.

CHAPTER: Government

VERSION: Separation of Church and State



**“I AM GOD...
I DID NOT SEPARATE THE CHURCH AND THE STATE.
MY CHURCH IS THE KINGDOM OF GOD.”**

Mark my words...

If God were the leader of the world, He would choose a theocracy or “religious” rule over His people, rather than a democracy. If God were the leader of the world, He would choose a monarchy with Jesus as King over a democracy. He would also choose a dictatorship, with Jesus as the “dictator” over a democracy. God gave people free-will and the free-will they have is enslaving the nations of peoples whose popular, democratic, and self-destructive decisions are killing them. Ultimately when you separate “church and state” what you are doing is creating your own “church” or religion and making it superior in the rule over a nation’s peoples. You are doing no less a sinful, unrighteous, and prideful action as Satan mistakenly did in thinking he was equal to God. And in this case, a government does far worse because basically they believe they are not just equal to God, but greater than God.

CHAPTER: Government
VERSION: Freedom of Religion

†

**“I AM GOD...
PARDON ME—”**

Mark my words...

The Constitution guarantees the right to practice “Freedom of Religion.” God gives man free-will. God gives man the right to have a Constitution.

CHAPTER: Government

VERSION: Politics

†

**“I AM GOD...
I AM NOT A ‘CONSERVATIVE’, A ‘LIBERAL’,
A ‘REPUBLICAN’ OR A ‘DEMOCRAT’—
I AM PERFECT.”**

Matthew 5:48 {KJV}

⁴⁸Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

Mark my words...

The closer a person or politician is to “conservatism” what that is really saying is: “The closer they are to the perfection of God.” All the while, when you hear someone called a “Christian Conservative”; even so, they are not “conservative” enough.



“I AM GOD...”

James 2:14-26

Faith Without Works Is Dead

¹⁴What does it profit, my brethren, if someone says he has faith but does not have works? Can faith save him? ¹⁵If a brother or sister is naked and destitute of daily food, ¹⁶and one of you says to them, “Depart in peace, be warmed and filled,” but you do not give them the things which are needed for the body, what does it profit? ¹⁷Thus also faith by itself, if it does not have works, is dead.

¹⁸But someone will say, “You have faith, and I have works.” Show me your faith without your works, and I will show you my faith by my works. ¹⁹You believe that there is one God. You do well. Even the demons believe—and tremble! ²⁰But do you want to know, O foolish man, that faith without works is dead? ²¹Was not Abraham our father justified by works when he offered Isaac his son on the altar? ²²Do you see that faith was working together with his works, and by works faith was made perfect? ²³And the Scripture was fulfilled which says, “Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.” And he was called the friend of God. ²⁴You see then that a man is justified by works, and not by faith only.

²⁵Likewise, was not Rahab the harlot also justified by works when she received the messengers and sent them out another way?

²⁶For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

John 6:28-29

²⁸Then they said to Him, “What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?”

²⁹Jesus answered and said to them, “This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.”

Mark my words...

Jewish people thought God accepted you by good works—this left man to decide for himself [or in the Jews’ case: the Jewish leaders]—what works were good or bad; how much work to do; and in some cases of judgment: did your life reflect works enough to gain you Heaven? This also led to man, Jewish leaders, having to judge for themselves only a judgment that God can make. Since, when Jesus Christ lived, He taught that God’s entry fee was not an obligation or rewards for your work—but His gift or His grace of having Jesus defeat, buy back, and die for man’s sinful ways.

When Jewish teachers and disciples, like Paul, taught people about Jesus and Christianity—they were very distinct and clear that grace and the gift of Jesus supersedes and thus replaces the erroneous, Jewish teachings.

However, today; with the knowledge, and faith, and work of Jesus; Christians have received the gift of God’s grace needed for salvation. Again, it is Jesus who worked to redeem us, and it was Jesus’ teaching in unearthing the discovery of what man needs to “get in.”

Yet, like forgiveness and every and anything else given freely by The Lord, we still need to accept it! If we don’t accept or take hold of it, it is not ours.

Today, now that Christianity is the way to Heaven; many Christians and churches have let their human nature and misinterpretations of God’s grace lead them to the conclusion that essentially no work has to be done. Accepting, taking something, takes effort—it takes work, in a sense. And now there is a devout reliance of God’s grace by the notion that nothing needs to be done to accept it. Yes, it is given freely, but the Scriptures state throughout, that the acceptance of this grace of God is accomplished by the works we do for The Lord, as The Lord has worked for us by doing the will of the Father, and in His case, dying on the cross.

It is our Christian responsibility to work and to serve [serving is working], to serve The Lord. In serving Him and working for Him, we have faith that He judges us acceptable at the time of death.

Working, as the Jews did before Christ; was enough for God to credit them as righteous. Accepting the gift of Jesus and the grace of God to provide His Son; gives Christians the opportunity and responsibility to accept Jesus and to serve Him. Beware not to rely on grace so much that you neglect service to God. Human nature will tend to do that and that is what is happening to some Christians. Working for and serving God apart from an acceptance of Jesus—is like not working for God at all—nor is simply relying on God’s grace and not serving Him at all. The key is to accept Jesus, and acceptance means following Jesus and His teachings on working for Him and serving Him—that will show you truly accept Him.



**“I AM GOD...
I HAVE A PLAN.”**

Mark my words...

God says there is a step-by-step plan; and the Bible clearly outlines it. Basically, we are “Called onto good works”; and cannot just be “sitting on grace.”

God’s 3-Step Plan

1. Call to be saved
2. “Work out” salvation
3. Judgment

In other words...

When you get to The Judgment, God looks at works: good and bad. It is mistaught that your works will give you a different status in Heaven. What’s the point of Christ judging your works if everyone’s equal in Heaven [as I tend to believe]? Christ judges our works because it makes a difference as to whether we get in...And the blessing is: no one can work enough or do enough good, so Jesus looks to the Holy Spirit within you and says: now, I love you and here is the grace toward you for your faith in Me—you accepted Me—I accept you.

Non-believers, Christians with “bad works,” non-Christians and “Christians” without the Holy Spirit—these people get there and cannot get in: their works do not do it and there is no Holy Spirit. And part of the reason I know works matter is when Jesus tells “Christians” to “depart from me, you doers of iniquity”—these “Christians” either:

- Don’t have The Spirit of God in them.

- *They said they were “Christians” and thought they had The Spirit and did not work. Remember, Jesus said: “doers of iniquity.” Christ sees you have to do something—and they did iniquity, works of iniquity.*



**“I AM GOD...
IT IS BY MY GRACE
THAT YOUR WORKS SHALL SAVE YOU.”**

Mark my words...

You are not saved by your “works.” You are saved by God’s grace. And it is not “works” versus grace—it is “works” and grace. It is not “works” alone, and it is not grace alone. It is “works” and grace, alone.

In other words...

In the Old Testament, the Jewish people believed it was their works that could get them into Heaven, but Jesus instructed them that in the “old school” that was incorrect. The Law and standard to keep, in which to achieve righteousness in God’s eyes, was insufficient and unattainable. From a heavenly viewpoint, your works and goodness could not make you holy as God is holy. And from Christ’s human perspective, the standards were too self-righteous, burdensome, and taxing for God’s people to adhere to.

In instructing God’s people as to the truth of the debate of what I call “lazy grace”; here are the 3 primary reasons supporting the truth in God’s Word that it is God’s grace and man’s works that will be in judgment at the end.

1. God Knows Our Human Nature.

God knows if we “gave ourselves enough rope, we would hang ourselves.” That is to say, while we have the free-will to choose either God’s will or Satan’s will, God surely knows for man to accomplish the work to save the sinful, lost souls that God wants redeemed; God knows we would become ineffective and unfruitful if His grace was intended for us to become lazy, do-nothing, apostate, deadbeats. God would never shed His grace; and not work with man to correct and improve man, since God knows how man can pervert or corrupt His “grace” and further distance ourselves from the higher calling of our lives here on earth to love Him and each other—and to serve to save one another.

2. God Has Given Us His Commandments.

Jesus said: “If you love me, you will keep my commands.” Now you have to believe God is going to accept those who truly love Him. And if you love Him, you will accept Him. When God tells you to keep his commands; one of God’s Commandments is to “Keep holy the Sabbath.” When God tells you to: “Keep holy the Sabbath,” there is the presumption that you are going to be working those six days—again there is work involved. The Bible also says, “if you do not work you do not eat.” And Jesus made reference that being in Heaven with Him is to “eat of the fruit.” If you do not work, you do not eat the fruit—therefore, in this case, you do not get to Heaven.

3. God Is A God Of Work.

Jesus told man that it was by the grace of God, but not of works that we are saved. While this is true, it does not give permission for man to not work or serve The Lord. God is a God of work. God worked to create. God teaches us throughout Scripture the value of work and commands that we should work. God continually rates us on our work. God is not going to all of a sudden change and say we are not to work.

My last words...

Now, some will inherently ask, “How much work?”...The answer is: however much God deems appropriate. And while in this lifetime, we will never know how much; not to mention, we can never work enough for God; we can rest and put our trust in the grace of Jesus and have faith in the fact that God knows.

Basically, we can never work enough for God. And while humanly impossible, we should work every minute of every day. Keep in mind, God worked six days at The Creation before commanding us to “Keep Holy the Sabbath” which means we need to be holy that day. It doesn’t necessarily mean we should live like the devil the other six days of our “week.” And it doesn’t necessarily mean we should rest. Jesus worked on the Sabbath as the call arose. And God, the Creator, didn’t necessarily “rest” on the seventh day as much as He just wanted to look-over all the work He had just done. The key to “Keeping holy the Sabbath” and to “resting” on the seventh day: is holiness. We are to bring to a peak; the perfection and holiness we seek, minute by minute, day-to-day and week-to-week.

In closing, truth be told...through the gift of our true faith—we have faith in God’s grace. And His grace is His judgment. We trust that Jesus is going to make the right decision concerning our salvation. And the unending peace we have comes from knowing His grace and judgment are righteous, loving, and true. And whatever He decides is the fate of our eternal lives should be fine by us—and we should say: “I can live with it either way”—because we will.

CHAPTER: Healing
VERSION: Hypno-Human Healing

†

**“I AM GOD...
I ALONE, I AM ‘THE HEALER.’”**

Mark my words...

When ministers preach about “connecting” with the Holy Spirit in sermonizing and healing—this might well be a man using certain mental tools to bring on a mental healing. Basically, they use certain words and patterns and place them within the context of Scripture to mesmerize and hypnotize. Curiously, nowhere in the Word of God do these words appear in the context the ministers use [and abuse] them. When you hear the following words, beware:

“Access”

“Activate”

“Connect”

“Hot”

“Point of contact”

“Quicken”

“Release”

“Tap into”

“Trigger”

As well, what does appear in the Bible is Jesus’ warning on the prayerful repetitions that are also used [and overused]:

Matthew 6:7

⁷And when you pray, do not use vain repetitions as the heathen do. For they think that they will be heard for their many words.

In other words...

Pastor Benny Hinn has said: "I'm afraid too many people look for the healing and not the healer."

True...and the same can be said for: loneliness, hopelessness, comfortless, etc. In times of healing and when in need of healing—people need to look for the one person who is the Word of God; to speak the Word of God; and the one person who is God—Jesus Christ.

My last words...

While this type of healing may be effective, "it is what it is." And nothing in human power can be as effective as [and less abused] than divine power. And the reason there is the bridge in the confusion between people crediting the human and not the Creator, is because of the human tools and mental technology in the healing "process." It can be compared to the 12-step program for addictions: while this may be an effective method of healing for some, it is not the godly method. A program for addicts centered on Christ is the godly way; for the "Higher Power" spoken of in the premiere step in the 12-step program needs to be Jesus Christ. This is why a person is more prone and tempted to fall away or backslide in the 12-step program than by following the steps that lead to Jesus Christ. This is true because the "Higher Power" that is not Christ; is a human or false god; as with divine healing, the same principles hold true.

Truth be told, I, myself, was "healed" of alcoholism and drug addiction at the feet of a "healing preacher." Yet, it was my insight and growth in the knowledge and nature of Jesus Christ, and the power of the Holy Spirit, which maintained the "work" done that day. As well, I have learned that the "healing" that day was caused by a demonic exorcism rather than by instructional teachings, the process of "steps," or a "divine impartation" or "divine healing." The fact of the matter is: as my knowledge and understanding of Jesus and His Holy Spirit grew and inhabited me; the greater the strength and effectiveness of that healing, and the eviction of the demons causing the addictions. In addition, I have also learned [the hard way] how believing in the workings of a "divine healer" can be very dangerous and destructive to another addiction I have struggled and battled with defeating. And the deceptive workings of this pastor's "healing ministry" in conjunction with my lack of knowledge, discernment and wisdom; could have led to financial ruin, cultism, imprisonment and death.

Let me offer a Biblical and earthly enlightenment of a divine healing. In the Bible, people were healed when Jesus exorcised or commanded a demon or demons to depart from that person. The demons left because Jesus was God [God has all power] and because the demon-possessed believed Jesus was God. As well, Jesus healed by only His touch [or when people reached out just to

touch Him] and by His spoken word. It did not take an elaborate presentation or dissertation, and an abundance of words, teaching or preaching. Jesus said it and it was done.

Later, Jesus gave the same power to the disciples. And just as with The Master, the disciples did not have a “healing ministry,” but merely they preached about Christ, walked the walk of faith, and followed the life of Christ. And in one example, those who simply touched the garment of Peter were healed.

In an earthly sense, let me put it this way; a person has a better chance of being healed by being in the presence of the Pope, who is simply a High Priest of God [assuming that the Pope does have the presence of the Holy Spirit], than they do by some “healing preacher” who runs a “healing ministry.” The key is to be in the midst of God and the presence of the Holy Spirit. And the best chance any person has to be healed is by giving your life over to Christ and filling yourself with the Holy Spirit, whereby the spiritual invasion of holiness into your body will ward off and defeat any unhealthiness, addictions, or evil that may have possessed you.



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Most people in the world are overweight. Jesus designed every human being to have a perfect weight for each. The first Christ-like method to dieting and weight loss is fasting. Numerically speaking, if a person completely fasts [no food or drink] just one day a week, as prescribed by God Himself; they will lose 1/7th or 14.2857 % of the bodyweight they now have. Overall, they will basically be 1/7th or 14.2857 % more effective physically.

In addition, if a person fasts one day per week; financially, they will save 1/7th or 14.2857% off of their food bills. For example, if you spend \$100 per week on food, when you completely fast you will save almost \$743 over the course of a year.

As well, you will appreciate the blessing of the food God has given you. The great, godly and wise King Solomon said one of the best things man can do for himself is to enjoy his food. And a person will be less spoiled, and naturally more appreciative, if they administer fasting to the plan for their health and well-being.

Also, it has been misinterpreted and falsely believed that fasting causes a person to hallucinate. This is absolutely wrong. When people fast, they will often see visions and hear things that they normally would not. This is not hallucinating; simply, fasting better connects a person to their spiritual self. God created man a spiritual being. And God had a special connection and communication with man even before man ate his first meal.

Finally, when you fast, you will be honoring God and improving your personal relationship with Him.

CHAPTER: *Health*

VERSION: *Fasting* — (Mark 9:29)

†

**“I AM GOD...
YOUR SPIRIT DOES NOT EAT FOOD.
WHEN FASTING YOU DENY YOUR BODY
[EARTHLY NATURE]
SO AS TO ACCESS YOUR SPIRIT
[SPIRITUAL NATURE].”**

Mark 9:29

²⁹So He said to them, “This kind can come out by nothing but prayer and fasting.”

Mark my words...

This is a spiritual event—so prayer and fasting are done again, to better achieve and access a heavenly, spiritual nature rather than a bodily, earthly one.

In other words...

Fasting does not lead to “hallucinations,” that’s one of the devil’s and man’s lies. Fasting [and prayer], and all things that develop and put us in touch with our spiritual being allow us to see other spiritual beings: namely angels. The fact is: if people fasted more, they’d see more angels.

CHAPTER: *Health*

VERSION: *Life or Death Surgery and Health Decision*



**“I AM GOD...
LIFE-SAVING RECOVERY OR ILLNESS IS FOR
THE GREAT COMMISSION.”**

Mark my words...

I just saw a man who had open heart or some similar life-saving surgery. If that were me, I thought about what I would've done, or better yet, should do, or best yet—What Would Jesus Do?

My thought, ending in a win-win situation would be—I would have declined the physician. I would always resist the surgery, knowing God had no original design for His creation to be cut open. Secondly, I would have declined for a better option: natural healing or cure. Finally, I would accept the greatest Healer known to man: I would...

Without a doubt—I would elect to pray for a miracle. Because...should I get one...I am able to see, give, and speak all the glory to God for His supernatural saving work. And, if that method does not work and God chooses not to heal or cure me—then I die and start my next bodily life. [ADDED NOTE: and I start my next life, having my last earthly act be my life-or-death faith in Him]. The situation and the resolve therefore can only be win-win. [The less I put faith in humanity—the less likely I am to not give God all the credit. Or, the more I put faith in man—the less chance a man will give God the glory.]

In other words...

The only reason Jesus saves you in a life-threatening instance, the only reason, [not family, friends, more wealth, not more appreciation for life, not even to give you a thousand-second chances for a thousand things done or undone], it is solely so you can [begin for the first time or work harder] to go on with your life to share the Gospel or Good News of Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER: *Health*

VERSION: *Wine and Spirits — (John 2:1-11)*

†

“I AM GOD...”

John 2:1-11

Water Turned to Wine

Jesus’ First Miracle at Cana

¹On the third day there was a wedding in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there. ²Now both Jesus and His disciples were invited to the wedding. ³And when they ran out of wine, the mother of Jesus said to Him, “They have no wine.”

⁴Jesus said to her, “Woman, what does your concern have to do with Me? My hour has not yet come.”

⁵His mother said to the servants, “Whatever He says to you, do it.”

⁶Now there were set there six waterpots of stone, according to the manner of purification of the Jews, containing twenty or thirty gallons apiece. ⁷Jesus said to them, “Fill the waterpots with water.” And they filled them up to the brim. ⁸And He said to them, “Draw some out now, and take it to the master of the feast.” And they took it. ⁹When the master of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and did not know where it came from (but the servants who had drawn the water knew), the master of the feast called the bridegroom. ¹⁰And he said to him, “Every man at the beginning sets out the good wine, and when the guests have well drunk, then the inferior. You have kept the good wine until now!”

¹¹This beginning of signs Jesus did in Cana of Galilee, and manifested His glory; and His disciples believed in Him.

Mark my words...

This was Jesus' first "miracle" recorded in the Bible. It was not the first "miracle" He performed. For by sheer definition, a miracle is simply an act of God. And miracles cannot be comprehended by man, but it is wholly attributable to an often-misunderstood God. Again, anything that God does is from God's perspective, just God being God. But from man's perspective, when something unexplainable occurs and the person of God is unknown or misunderstood; that occurrence is called a "miracle." The moral of the story is: since Jesus is God, all that Jesus does can be called miraculous, and Jesus has been in the Heavens and on earth since the beginning of time; not to mention, when He came to earth as a man, in human form, He was alive about 30 years before the day of this wedding.

In other words...

As well, God would not let the first recorded "miracle" of His Son's be one that could lead to intoxicating, irresponsible or irreverent behavior of the guests at this gathering. Keep in mind, the nature of wine itself is derived from fruit. Through time and the process called fermentation, together with a spiritual loss of purification, natural fruit juices then take on strong, alcoholic qualities that lead to drunkenness, sin and destruction. The fact remains, for a liquid to become wine, it must have a length of time to ferment. It is the natural process of fermentation that turns plain nectar or fruit juice into an alcoholic mixture. And as John's story clearly relates, the change from water to wine was instantaneous and by all means miraculous. And those which are natural wonders of The Lord's creation: water and fruits; Satan has perverted into a self-destructive and suicidal poison which serves no earthly purpose in glorifying the Creator.

My last words...

Liquor stores that offer nothing more than intoxication, escapism, depression, addiction and self-destruction often times are seen as offering "wine and spirits." How true that is. The wine is from the fermented grape and the "spirits" are no less than the Spirit of Evil, Satan himself, and the demonic forces and evil spirits that accompany him.

There is no value to drinking "strong drink" or drinking "spirits." In no way does it glorify God and your body; a body which the Holy Spirit is intended to reside.

CHAPTER: Health

VERSION: You Are What You Eat

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

As explained in CHAPTER: Health / VERSION: Wine and Spirits (John 2:1-11); the nature of wine itself is derived from fruit. With time and the process called fermentation, together with a spiritual loss of purification; only then do natural fruit juices take on strong, alcoholic qualities that lead to drunkenness, sin and destruction.

This loss of sanctification can take place in the growing of plants and all vegetation. And the natural goodness and healing functions can either be mixed or enhanced to create medicines, drugs, and poisons that are sinful and also destructive.

CHAPTER: Health

VERSION: Food and Eating

†

**“I AM GOD...
FOOD MANUFACTURERS PUT PROCESSED
SUGAR IN THEIR FOODS SO A PERSON WILL
BECOME ADDICTED TO THAT FOOD.”**

Mark my words...

Like tobacco companies—who put nicotine and other addictive agents in cigarettes and tobacco products so users would become addicted and be possessed to continue using their product—food manufacturers put sugar in their products so a person will become addicted to that food and have a compulsion to buy that food.

CHAPTER: *Health*

VERSION: *Jesus Fish — (John 21:1-14)*



**“I AM GOD...
FOR MANKIND, THERE IS A TRICK TO EATING FISH.”**

John 21:1-14

A Breakfast by the Sea

¹After these things Jesus showed Himself again to the disciples at the Sea of Tiberias, and in this way He showed Himself: ²Simon Peter, Thomas called the Twin, Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, the sons of Zebedee, and two others of His disciples were together. ³Simon Peter said to them, “I am going fishing.”

They said to him, “We are going with you also.” They went out and immediately got into the boat, and that night they caught nothing. ⁴But when the morning had now come, Jesus stood on the shore; yet the disciples did not know that it was Jesus. ⁵Then Jesus said to them, “Children, have you any food?”

They answered Him, “No.”

⁶And He said to them, “Cast the net on the right side of the boat, and you will find some.” So they cast, and now they were not able to draw it in because of the multitude of fish.

⁷Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter, “It is the Lord!” Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he put on his outer garment (for he had removed it), and plunged into the sea. ⁸But the other disciples came in the little boat (for they were not far from land, but about two hundred cubits), dragging the net with fish. ⁹Then, as soon as they had come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid on it, and bread. ¹⁰Jesus said to them, “Bring some of the fish which you have just caught.”

¹¹Simon Peter went up and dragged the net to land, full of large fish, one hundred and fifty-three; and although there were so many, the net was not broken. ¹²Jesus said to them, “Come and eat breakfast.” Yet none of

the disciples dared ask Him, “Who are You?”—knowing that it was the Lord. ¹³Jesus then came and took the bread and gave it to them, and likewise the fish.

¹⁴This is now the third time Jesus showed Himself to His disciples after He was raised from the dead.

Mark my words...

I believe I finally have understanding on Jesus' eating of fish—Jesus had resurrection power, and these creatures are His—He can restore their life. Man hasn't the power and therefore should not kill; and should adherently follow the laws of nature that say we don't need to eat meat. It was okay one time because Jesus made fish—later He miraculously multiplies the fish.

In other words...

CHAPTER: *Heaven*
VERSION: *If I Was God...*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

“At times, I think: If I was God...I wouldn’t let anyone in.”

- *The Writer*

CHAPTER: Heaven

VERSION: "I'm no one special, but I know I'm going to Heaven."

†

**"I AM GOD...
HEAVEN IS FOR IMPERFECTION."**

CHAPTER: Heaven

VERSION: Believe Jesus in Heaven



**“I AM GOD...
HEAVEN IS FOR THOSE WHO BELIEVE IN IT AND JESUS.”**

Mark my words...

At this point in my life—I hate my life. I hate my life on this earth. And it’s not as if I’m greatly concerned, interested or enlightened at the prospect of changing it. Rather, my peace comes from the fact that I don’t fear dying. I am enthusiastic about dying. I have my greatest hope from believing [knowing] that the next life, the life in Heaven I long for, will be the good life I can look forward to [and shall find].

One of the most profound types of knowledge I have are the words of Jesus who said a person must hate or lose his life on this earth to have his life in the next world (John 12:24-26). I think, in part, that Jesus wants you to suffer for good in this life [and for Him]. The greater a person suffers for good—the greater they are going to have to suffer with evil. Yes, you must suffer evil in suffering for good. And this “suffering” will lead to “hating” this life. And from this hatred, a person must have faith in God to have the gifts, including faith, to believe there is a new life, another life in Heaven. In addition, only by faith in God, can God give you other needed attributes like hope and peace.

The other thought I have is this: that Heaven is only available to those who believe in Heaven. If you love this life on earth to the point you don’t believe, or essentially need, long for, or desire Heaven—Heaven is not available for you. In addition, to those who suffer or are burdened through this life and have no place to turn; no hope, no faith, no belief in Heaven—pity them—for Heaven is not available to them. Heaven is only available to those who believe in it. And the only way to truly believe in it is to believe truly in Jesus. And in truly believing in Jesus, one must be willing to suffer and lose their life in this world in order to gain the Heaven they so too believe in.

CHAPTER: Heaven
VERSION: Obedience to Heaven

†

“I AM GOD...”

1 Samuel 15:22

²²So Samuel said:

**“Has the LORD as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices,
As in obeying the voice of the LORD?
Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice,
And to heed than the fat of rams.**

Mark my words...

Believing in Christ and what Christ teaches is one thing—being disobedient is something else.

In other words...

This means people need to at least know who God is, and how God is, to have a chance to go to Heaven. If people, then know the true God—then they can use free-will to choose to be disobedient.

CHAPTER: Heaven

VERSION: Are My Relatives and Friends Looking Down From Heaven?

†

**“I AM GOD...
NO. I AM GOD...
THOSE IN HEAVEN ARE LOOKING AT ME.
YOU WOULD BE BEST SERVED IF YOU,
IN YOUR HUMANITY, DID THE SAME.”**

CHAPTER: Holy Spirit
VERSION: Here and Gone

†

“I AM GOD...”

John 16:7

⁷Nevertheless I tell you the truth. It is to your advantage that I go away; for if I do not go away, the Helper will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send Him to you.

Mark my words...

Jesus needed to die for the Holy Spirit to come. Jesus not only died for our sins and to save us from Satan’s Hell—Jesus came and went because this would send or transfer the Holy Spirit from the heavenly realm to the Earth and we in the human realm.

The Father—He is Jesus and Spirit.

Jesus—He is the Father.

The Holy Spirit—Jesus died and left His with us—similar to when we sense the remembrance, presence, and “spirit” of loved ones who died before us [keep in mind, there is absolutely no spirit of loved ones left behind. The only spirits in the world are Jesus’ Holy Spirit and Satan’s evil spirit].



**“I AM GOD...
THERE ARE TWO KEYS TO HEAVEN.”**

Mark my words...

There are two keys in a human being's life that determine their eternal life, and these two keys open the entry gates into Heaven.

1. You must have the Holy Spirit present within you when your body and mind cease to exist.

In other words...

It does not make a difference when or if He, the Holy Spirit, was in you at any time prior in your life; whether at birth, Baptism, or becoming “born again.” The Holy Spirit must be within you at the exact moment your life on earth ceases to exist and your true spiritual self meets Jesus Christ.

2. If and when the Holy Spirit is within you at the time of your earthly death—it will be He who “speaks” for you and represents you at the judgment seat of Christ. And the Holy Spirit will know what to “say on your behalf.” In fact, by His presence alone, will Jesus find you acceptable?

On the other side, if you do not have the Holy Spirit present within you at your death; when you do meet Jesus at The Judgment, you will not appear to God as holy. And only holy beings can enter into His Kingdom. Furthermore, there is nothing you can say in your defense that will gain you entry into Heaven.

Finally, if you should be alive when Jesus Christ returns, in what is commonly referred to as “the rapture”; again, you must have the Holy Spirit dwelling inside of you and only He will represent you and unite you to Christ at that time.

My last words...

As noted, there are two keys in a human being's life that determine their eternal life, and these two keys open the entry gates into Heaven.

1. You must have the Holy Spirit present within you when your body and mind cease to exist.

These are Scripture verses that attest to this fact...

1 Thessalonians 5:3

The Day of the Lord

¹But concerning the times and the seasons, brethren, you have no need that I should write to you. ²For you yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night. ³For when they say, "Peace and safety!" then sudden destruction comes upon them, as labor pains upon a pregnant woman. And they shall not escape. ⁴But you, brethren, are not in darkness, so that this Day should overtake you as a thief. ⁵You are all sons of light and sons of the day. We are not of the night nor of darkness. ⁶Therefore let us not sleep, as others do, but let us watch and be sober. ⁷For those who sleep, sleep at night, and those who get drunk are drunk at night. ⁸But let us who are of the day be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and as a helmet the hope of salvation. ⁹For God did not appoint us to wrath, but to obtain salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁰who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with Him. ¹¹Therefore comfort each other and edify one another, just as you also are doing.

Various Exhortations

¹²And we urge you, brethren, to recognize those who labor among you, and are over you in the Lord and admonish you, ¹³and to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake. Be at peace among yourselves. ¹⁴Now we exhort you, brethren, warn those who are unruly, comfort the fainthearted, uphold the weak, be patient with all. ¹⁵See that no one renders evil for evil to anyone, but always pursue what is good both for yourselves and for all. ¹⁶Rejoice always, ¹⁷pray without ceasing, ¹⁸in everything give thanks; for

this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.

¹⁹Do not quench the Spirit. ²⁰Do not despise prophecies. ²¹Test all things; hold fast what is good. ²²Abstain from every form of evil.

Blessing and Admonition

²³Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify you completely; and may your whole spirit, soul, and body be preserved blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. ²⁴He who calls you is faithful, who also will do it.

²⁵Brethren, pray for us.

²⁶Greet all the brethren with a holy kiss.

²⁷I charge you by the Lord that this epistle be read to all the holy brethren.

²⁸The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

Hebrews 10:1-39

Justified By Faith in Christ's Sacrifice

¹For the law, having a shadow of the good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with these same sacrifices, which they offer continually year by year, make those who approach perfect.

²For then would they not have ceased to be offered? For the worshipers, once purified, would have had no more consciousness of sins. ³But in those sacrifices there is a reminder of sins every year. ⁴For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and goats could take away sins.

Christ's Death Fulfills God's Will

⁵Therefore, when He came into the world, He said:

“Sacrifice and offering You did not desire,
But a body You have prepared for Me.

⁶In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin
You had no pleasure.

⁷Then I said, “Behold, I have come—
In the volume of the book it is written of Me—
To do Your will, O God.”

⁸Previously saying, “Sacrifice and offering, burnt offerings, and offerings

for sin You did not desire, nor had pleasure in them” (which are offered according to the law),⁹ then He said, “Behold, I have come to do Your will, O God.” He takes away the first that He may establish the second.¹⁰ By that will we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

Christ’s Death Perfects the Sanctified

¹¹And every priest stands ministering daily and offering repeatedly the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins. ¹²But this Man, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down at the right hand of God, ¹³from that time waiting till His enemies are made His footstool. ¹⁴For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified.

¹⁵But the Holy Spirit also witnesses to us; for after He had said before, ¹⁶“This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them,” ¹⁷then He adds, “Their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more.” ¹⁸Now where there is remission of these, there is no longer an offering for sin.

Hold Fast Your Confession

¹⁹Therefore, brethren, having boldness to enter the Holiest by the blood of Jesus, ²⁰by a new and living way which He consecrated for us, through the veil, that is, His flesh, ²¹and having a High Priest over the house of God, ²²let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water. ²³Let us hold fast the confession of our hope without wavering, for He who promised is faithful. ²⁴And let us consider one another in order to stir up love and good works, ²⁵not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as is the manner of some, but exhorting one another, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching.

The Just Live By Faith

²⁶For if we sin willfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, ²⁷but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and fiery indignation which will devour the

adversaries.²⁸ Anyone who has rejected Moses' law dies without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses.²⁹ Of how much worse punishment, do you suppose, will he be thought worthy who has trampled the Son of God underfoot, counted the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified a common thing, and insulted the Spirit of grace?³⁰ For we know Him who said, "Vengeance is Mine, I will repay," says the Lord. And again, "The LORD will judge His people."³¹ It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

³²But recall the former days in which, after you were illuminated, you endured a great struggle with sufferings:³³ partly while you were made a spectacle both by reproaches and tribulations, and partly while you became companions of those who were so treated;³⁴ for you had compassion on me in my chains, and joyfully accepted the plundering of your goods, knowing that you have a better and an enduring possession for yourselves in heaven.³⁵ Therefore do not cast away your confidence, which has great reward.³⁶ For you have need of endurance, so that after you have done the will of God, you may receive the promise:

³⁷"For yet a little while,
And He who is coming will come and will not tarry.
³⁸Now the just shall live by faith;
But if anyone draws back,
My soul has no pleasure in him."

³⁹But we are not of those who draw back to perdition, but of those who believe to the saving of the soul.

James 5:19

Bring Back the Erring One

¹⁹Brethren, if anyone among you wanders from the truth, and someone turns him back,²⁰ let him know that he who turns a sinner from the error of his way will save a soul from death and cover a multitude of sins.

1 John 5:6-13

The Certainty Of God's Witness

⁶This is He who came by water and blood—Jesus Christ; not only by

water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. ⁷For there are three that bear witness in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one. ⁸And there are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one.

⁹If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater; for this is the witness of God which He has testified of His Son. ¹⁰He who believes in the Son of God has the witness in himself; he who does not believe God has made Him a liar, because he has not believed the testimony that God has given of His Son. ¹¹And this is the testimony: that God has given us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. ¹²He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life. ¹³These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may continue to believe in the name of the Son of God.

As noted, there are two keys in a human being's life that determine their eternal life, and these two keys open the entry gates into Heaven.

2. If and when the Holy Spirit is within you at the time of your earthly death—it will be He who “speaks” for you and represents you at the judgment seat of Christ. And the Holy Spirit will know what to “say on your behalf.” In fact, by His presence alone, will Jesus find you acceptable.

These are Scripture verses that give evidence to the Holy Spirit speaking for man or representing a person on their behalf before Christ at The Judgment [Romans, Chapter 8 is applicable for both of these keys, numbers 1 and 2, in this teaching].

Romans 8:1-30

Free From Indwelling Sin

Salvation from Sin, Death, and Suffering

¹There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. ²For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death. ³For what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh, God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, on account of sin: He condemned sin in the flesh, ⁴that the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us who

do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit. ⁵For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. ⁶For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. ⁷Because the carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can be. ⁸So then, those who are in the flesh cannot please God.

⁹But you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you. Now if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he is not His. ¹⁰And if Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. ¹¹But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit who dwells in you.

Sonship through the Spirit

¹²Therefore, brethren, we are debtors—not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh. ¹³For if you live according to the flesh you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live. ¹⁴For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God. ¹⁵For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, “Abba, Father.” ¹⁶The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God, ¹⁷and if children, then heirs—heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together.

From Suffering to Glory

¹⁸For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. ¹⁹For the earnest expectation of the creation eagerly waits for the revealing of the sons of God. ²⁰For the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it in hope; ²¹because the creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. ²²For we know that the whole creation groans and labors with birth pangs together until now. ²³Not only that, but we also who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, eagerly waiting for the adoption, the redemption of our body. ²⁴For we were saved in this hope, but hope that

is seen is not hope; for why does one still hope for what he sees? ²⁵But if we hope for what we do not see, we eagerly wait for it with perseverance.

²⁶Likewise the Spirit also helps in our weaknesses. For we do not know what we should pray for as we ought, but the Spirit Himself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. ²⁷Now He who searches the hearts knows what the mind of the Spirit is, because He makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God.

²⁸And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose. ²⁹For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren. ³⁰Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified.

John 3:16

¹⁶For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.

1 John 5:1

Obedience by Faith

¹Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves Him who begot also loves him who is begotten of Him.

CHAPTER: Holy Spirit

VERSION: The Bible Said We Shall Witness In "Spirit and Truth."

†

**"I AM GOD...
THE TRUTH IS—
ANYONE WHO BELIEVES IN KILLING ANOTHER
HUMAN BEING DOES NOT BELIEVE THE TRUTH—
AND DOES NOT, NOR CAN THEY POSSESS
THE HOLY SPIRIT."**

CHAPTER: Holy Spirit

VERSION: Praying Down the Holy Spirit



**“I AM GOD...
THE HOLY SPIRIT IS ALREADY THERE.
YOU NEED TO PRAY
TO PUT YOURSELVES IN MY PRESENCE.”**

Mark my words...

Many pastors speak about the Holy Spirit “showing up” or “now being present.” Truth be told, the Holy Spirit is always present [like the air]. The communication and “presence” are made when man gets his mind, body, and his spirit in the proper place: in a union with the ever-present Holy Spirit.

*There is a great divide between Heaven and Earth [In a different teaching, Luke 16:26 illustrates a divide between Heaven and Hell: **“And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that those who want to pass from here to you cannot, nor can those from there pass to us.”**]. In this teaching on being in the presence of—or receiving the Holy Spirit—let it be known; the Holy Spirit is alive here on Earth; Christians don’t ask or “pray Him down.” Either He is in you and you “have Him”; or He is not “in you” and you don’t “have Him.” If a person does not have or know Him, that person is not a Christian. In either case, a person may pray to God that they may receive Him. In these circumstances, it is a person’s position to ask the Holy Spirit from the world around you into your heart and mind; and do so by praying to receive and accept Him.*

In other words...

You cannot pray the Holy Spirit to come down upon you or visit you—rather pray that you “lift up” or “open up” your minds and hearts to come in touch with Him. Therefore, a prayer might go: “Holy Spirit who is in us—work your power and glory through us. Holy Spirit, for those who don’t know or have you—God draw them near to you and let your Holy Spirit fill them.” And believe me; just the thought of this makes all the difference in the [spirit] world.



**“I AM GOD...
MY SON, JESUS, WAS BORN DIRT POOR.
HE WAS BORN HOMELESS.
IN HIS YOUTH, HE WAS OFTEN AWAY FROM HOME.
HE WAS A HOMELESS CHILD.
WHEN HE WAS OUT-OF-WORK AS A CARPENTER,
HE LIVED HOMELESS.
FOR THREE YEARS, HE WAS A HOMELESS STREET
PREACHER.
AT HIS DEATH, HE HAD NOWHERE TO LAY HIS HEAD TO
REST.
MY SON, JESUS, HE DIED HOMELESS.”**

Luke 9:57-58

⁵⁷Now it happened as they journeyed on the road, that someone said to Him, “Lord, I will follow You wherever You go.”

⁵⁸And Jesus said to him, “Foxes have holes and birds of the air have nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay His head.”

Mark my words...

Jesus was homeless; that’s how important it is to God.

In other words...

- Jesus Christ, for lack of a better word, was a “typical” homeless person.
 - He was born on the dirt floor of a barn.
 - From age 12-30, He was homeless when He was out-of-work as a carpenter.
 - From age 30-33, He was a homeless “street preacher.”
 - At His death, He had no earthly grave for His body to be laid to rest.
-



**“I AM GOD...
WHEN I WAS HOMELESS, YOU GAVE ME...”**

Mark my words...

Matthew 25:31-36

The Son of Man Will Judge the Nations

³¹“When the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then He will sit on the throne of His glory. ³²All the nations will be gathered before Him, and He will separate them one from another, as a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats. ³³And He will set the sheep on His right hand, but the goats on the left. ³⁴Then the King will say to those on His right hand, “Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: ³⁵for I was hungry and you gave Me food; I was thirsty and you gave Me drink; I was a stranger and you took Me in; ³⁶I was naked and you clothed Me; I was sick and you visited Me; I was in prison and you came to Me.’

In other words...

³⁷“Then the righteous will answer Him, saying, “Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You drink? ³⁸When did we see You a stranger and take You in, or naked and clothe You? ³⁹Or when did we see You sick, or in prison, and come to You?’ ⁴⁰And the King will answer and say to them, “Assuredly, I say to you, inasmuch as you did it to one of the least of these My brethren, you did it to Me.’

Truth be told...

Matthew 25:41-43

⁴¹“Then He will also say to those on the left hand, “Depart from Me, you cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels:
⁴²for I was hungry and you gave Me no food; I was thirsty and you gave Me no drink; ⁴³I was a stranger and you did not take Me in, naked and you did not clothe Me, sick and in prison and you did not visit Me.’

Mark my words...

He was born in a stable, lived homeless, and died in a borrowed grave. He wasn't a godly man like King David or King Solomon, who lived in a castle or mansion. But He was the God-man, the King of Kings, who lived as a homeless man.

In other words...

“I’ve often thought, myself, I’d rather die than spend another sleepless night in this freezing cold, pouring rain, or burning heat”; Jesus did.

CHAPTER: Homelessness

VERSION: God Promises To Provide: Food, Clothing and Shelter



**“I AM GOD...
A MAN MAY BE LESS A HOME,
BUT HE IS NO LESS A NEIGHBOR.”**

Matthew 6:25-26

Do Not Worry

²⁵“Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink; nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food and the body more than clothing? ²⁶Look at the birds of the air, for they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they?

Mark my words...

The Creator promises to provide for His creation. Even the birds are fed by man when the days and seasons are barren and dry. The Lord expects that man would do the same for their fellow man. God may choose to work directly from Heaven to supply man’s basic material needs; however, He would rather that man follow God’s direction and serve in helping one another.

In other words...

Jesus said to “love thy neighbor”; Christians have no choice in the matter; they must help the homeless in order to serve God. They must love thy neighbor—even if that neighbor is less a home.

†

**“I
AM
GOD...
FROM YOUR
POINT-OF-VIEW,
IT’S NOT SURVIVING
BEING OUT OF WORK THAT
DEFINES A PERSON’S HOMELESSNESS;
BUT, FROM MY VIEWPOINT, IT’S THE WORK IT
TAKES TO SURVIVE THAT DEFINES A HOMELESS PERSON.”**

Mark my words...

I believe that if the owners of vacant or abandoned buildings gave more thoughtful consideration to the problem and cause of homelessness, that there would be mutually beneficial ways for even the poorest of the poor to at least get temporary shelter. Perhaps if a homeless person were to sign a waiver or a law were passed that anyone who is sleeping or sheltering in an abandoned building did not criminally or satanically desecrate, damage or destroy that property that the generosity of the owner could be rewarded by even a minimal of janitorial, watchman, or groundskeeping work done by the indigent inhabitants. In addition, the actions of those in need must be respectful, appreciative and productive. However, the greatest misnomer and miscarriage of judgment in such scenarios and cases; is the notion of “trespassing.” There is no such thing as “trespassing” from a truly godly standpoint. Not only has God created the very earth man walks, builds, and plants on; but God owns the right to lay claim to it all. Basically, God owns it all, and man is merely a steward over everything that God has made and given. In addition, man’s self-righteousness over property rights and passion for possessions consume him. God begs those owners, authorities, and even those without a sheltered home; keep in mind the nature of trespassing from His point-of-view. There is not a person alive who does not live in the very place where they lie, sit or stand.

CHAPTER: Homelessness

VERSION: “‘God forbid’ the homeless should have a place to sit.”



“I AM GOD... THE HOMELESS SHOULD HAVE A PLACE TO SIT.”

Mark my words...

It is a tragic state of affairs when I see private businesses, governmental authorities, and the “powers-that-be” go to such efforts to discourage homeless people from sitting or lying on unused bus or park benches; purposely constructing these furnishings with a design that only allows seating and the mindset that no one can lie there. This type of thinking and mentality does just that to me—it discourages. As of this writing, not only do I see new benches being constructed this way, but I see existing ones being equipped with metal brackets designed to allow only seating.

It would be a thoughtful and godly act, even by a simple signpost invitation and rules guideline, to allow those who wish or need to recline, to be allowed to do so during the “off” hours when most transit, transportation and municipal companies discontinue their bus service. Is it such a crime that the tired and weak should find a night’s rest? How hard or difficult would it be to have a bus driver or rider conscientiously wake up someone who might have made use of the bench overnight?

During the course of the writing of this book, I had occasion to try and sleep on a bus bench as I have witnessed many a homeless person do. And so I reclined on an empty bench located on the sidewalk and between the street and the church grounds that sprawled out behind it. At first, the hardness of the wood pained me and the three planks carved stripes on my back. My refuge and relaxation were the fact that I was a man of God on a mission and that I had no earthly idea who “owned” the bench. Was it the Catholic Church behind me, the bus company, or the municipality or government agency responsible for building the street or maintaining the sidewalk? The point being, I felt [that which is the truth] that God owned the bench and I was free to lay there, meditate, and rest my weary head on the wooden boards and sleep.

So as the traffic buzzed by and the streetlights shone on me like an interrogation spotlight, I did my best to accomplish getting some rest. As the hour passed, I was grateful for the automobile traffic to dissipate and disappear; evidence the fact I saw the far, far off traffic lights at the nearest intersection change with greater infrequency. Finally, the silence I so longed for, that would enable me to sleep, fell upon me.

Stop! Pain in my eardrums! Stop! Shock to my system! Stop! Victimization to my very Spirit! An emergency vehicle, designed I am certain to attend to the lives of those in need, blasts a man-made emergency sound that literally knocks me from the bench. Just six feet from my two feet, the large rig sounds its alarm, warning, or alert to no one and nothing but my two ears alone. Purposely, each night I lay there, as that paramedic vehicle leisurely drove by, it would ritually ravage my senses with the penetrating and violent sound of that horn. My only conclusion could be that the senseless and heartless driver(s) or agency they represented wanted to alert me to the fact that I was indeed homeless and being victimized, living in a dangerous situation. Mission accomplished. I knew each and every evening when the person or people driving that emergency vehicle drove by, that I was taking my own life in my hands; because for that paramedic ambulance and those people to do anything to save or rescue me, let alone lie in peace, was beyond all human reach.

In other words...

“‘God forbid’ the homeless should have a place to sit.”



**“I AM GOD...
HOW YOU TREAT A HOMELESS PERSON
IS A DIRECT RELATION ON HOW YOU TREAT ME.”**

Genesis 4:9

**“Then the LORD said to Cain, “Where is Abel your brother?”
He said, “I do not know. Am I my brother’s keeper?”**

My last words...

I believe there is also a real need for the needy and “homeless” to know that they are not alone in the world. In fact, more than any other problem; not lack of food, or clothing, or even the very shelter that defines a human being as “homeless,” is the lonely existence of a “homeless” person. And for certain, in a life without Christ, the loneliness is vast and crippling.

To that end, I would love to see people adopt one another. Similar to the “Big Brother” program, and simply just from one individual to another, and for the mutual benefits of the fortunate and less fortunate; we need to be our brother’s keeper.



“I AM GOD...”

- I arise restless.
- I am alone, hopeless, doubting, and fearful.
- I battle weather conditions: if you are cold—I and the homeless are freezing. If you are being rained on—I and the homeless are getting drenched. If you are hot—I and the homeless are burning up.
- I am hungry, not knowing where a meal comes from.
- I work to survive, not for luxury.
- I have no time for friendships, play or recreation, or personal development.
- I am burdened with the weight of any or all my belongings; or theft of those things of mine which are hidden.
- I am harassed and prodded along by people, police and authorities.
- I fear or worry about trespassing, with no sense of belonging or home.
- I, because of my dirty and foul-smelling clothing, may not enter a place or approach a person; and “God forbid,” should a person approach me.
- I am hungry, unhealthy, and if sick, I have nowhere to go. If I am in pain, I have no one to help.
- I have desperation, depression, and desolation.
- I am on the move, again; and again, after that.
- I am unaccepted, unwanted, and unloved.
- I am hungry and seek shelter from the weather.
- Where do I sleep?
- I am fearful of the elements, animals, people, and authorities.
- I see every patch of land, although owned by God, is claimed by a person, a company, or the government; or hope to God, a church—even so—virtually none is welcoming or helpful to the homeless.
- I am tired, defeated, rejected, useless, and seldom do I have a peaceful night’s sleep.
- I have no place to go to church, or no one with whom to share the Good News and Gospel of Jesus.

CHAPTER: Human Body

VERSION: Surrendering and Submission to Christ [1-12-99]

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

In surrendering and submission to Christ, we must grow and submit daily—the ultimate growth comes when we die. Are we so Jesus-like to accept our own death gracefully through Christ who died for us? That is the ultimate peace and our most poignant moment of our own despair—our own mortal death. Satanic, human pride is to deceive us into believing our body, our life, is our own—and not God’s. David was unable to die in peace without Christ. We believers must submit ourselves to death on our own cross. Die in the peace and love of Christ; our truest, ultimate submission: our soul to God the Creator.



**“I AM GOD...
PROSTITUTION IS ANY WOMAN OR MAN
WHO SELLS SEXUALITY.”**

Mark my words...

God says it is more than the actual sale of a sex act that He deems as prostitution. The truth of the matter is: when a waitress flashes a seductive gaze, or wears revealing clothing in order to induce a service tip—this is prostitution. When a man flexes his muscles in order to relay sexual attraction and it elicits another person financially: from the standpoint of The Almighty, this is considered prostitution. When a woman involves herself with or marries a man and she bases her decision on his financial life—that woman is acting as a prostitute. When a man takes a woman on a date and expects some sexual interaction in response to his paying for anything—he is soliciting prostitution. In “dating,” when a woman expects a man to pay for the dinner and the man expects “sex” because he did—that is manipulative prostitution.

Also, the words a person speaks relaying sexuality for monetary gain will cause them to prostitute themselves. So too, when a person intimates any sexual, physical interaction based on anything financial, that is prostitution.

In other words...

An establishment like Hooters is no more than a sinful and unwholesome whorehouse. In addition, a woman who “seeks” a husband’s “security” is prostituting herself. Not to mention, a woman who “expects” a man to pay on a date opens herself up to prostitution.

And for God’s sake, it is also prostitution when a man sells his sexuality to other men and women to other women. Truth be told: the sin of prostitution is compounded upon the sin of homosexuality.

CHAPTER: *Human Relations*
VERSION: *Homosexuality*

†

**“I AM GOD...
THE DEVIL IS A LIAR.”**

Mark my words...

God loves all—He knows that where there is a sin: there is Satan, and Satan is a liar. There is great deception amongst homosexuals because of this sin. The same is true for all who partake in sinful actions.

In other words...

Not only is there a great amount of deceit at work when a homosexual person will not admit their sexual preference and sinful inclination or behavior; but there is also guilt, shame and a whole host of weaknesses that remain behind closed doors. And these are not improper emotions, but the correct godly emotions to feel. Since homosexuality is a sin, at the heart of many human beings is an awareness this goes against godly nature. And when a homosexual male or female “comes out of the closet”; they are basically admitting and accepting their choice for sinful disobedience. And, truth be told, it is a choice. And while sexual perversity and addictions may seem uncontrollable and irresistible; God has a healing, righteous and blessed cure that comes in the form of the Holy Spirit and His Son, Jesus Christ.



“I AM GOD...”

ADVERSITY

1. Divine purpose behind all adversity.
2. God may reveal the reason.
3. Adversity can be a gift from God.
4. Adversity can be very painful.
5. Satan can be the agent delivering adversity.
6. God sends adversity to help to hinder us.
7. God doesn't scold us for praying for the adversity to leave.
8. God will comfort us in our adversity.
9. We're never alone in our adversity.
10. When experiencing adversity—we can experience grace.
11. By grace we are able to endure it victoriously.
12. God may see fit never to remove the adversity.
13. God's power within us—reaches its peak at the lowest moments of our adversity.
14. The spiritual blessings can surpass the adversity.

15. The right responses to adversity increase our fellowship with God.
16. If God doesn't remove the adversity, He will enable us to live through it.
17. Not only live with adversity but be content with it.
18. Our adversity may be preparation for future greatness or lesser adversity.
19. The key to enduring adversity triumphantly is to do it for Jesus' sake [not the satanic type, but the godly].
20. Adversity equips us to help others with it.

CHAPTER: *Joyful*
VERSION: *Joy to the Word*

†

**“I AM GOD...
BE JOYFUL.”**

Mark my words...

God instructs us to be joyful because He knows that we will better spread the Gospel. When we are angry and bitter, or displeased and hurting, do we really feel like speaking to anybody about anything, let alone God? God knows when we are upset, we are not in a position to preach the Word.

CHAPTER: Judgment

VERSION: Just Do — (Matthew 7:1-6)



**“I AM GOD...
JUST DO—DON’T ACCUSE!”**

Matthew 7:1-6

Do Not Judge

Things That Count with God

¹“Judge not, that you be not judged. ²For with what judgment you judge, you will be judged; and with the measure you use, it will be measured back to you. ³And why do you look at the speck in your brother’s eye, but do not consider the plank in your own eye? ⁴Or how can you say to your brother, “Let me remove the speck from your eye”; and look, a plank is in your own eye? ⁵Hypocrite! First remove the plank from your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother’s eye.

⁶“Do not give what is holy to the dogs; nor cast your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn and tear you in pieces.

Mark my words...

When God says: “Just do—don’t accuse!” basically He is saying, rather than pass judgment on another man, simply do what is right in God’s sight. Your righteous actions will be the most trusted and credible witness of the truth and way of God for the unrighteous or mistaken sinner.

As well, the renowned saying of Jesus: “Judge not, that you be not judged”—basically instructs man that God is the perfect judge and He has all wisdom and truth. There is no man who is the ultimate “judge and jury,” only Christ—and that unless one man is closer to the truth and perfection than another man, he is warned to not pass judgment on another man. In other words...

Jesus says...once God has judged you and instructed you on right and wrong, only then can you judge and do the same. But don't judge until you have been judged.

CHAPTER: *Judgment*

VERSION: *Judgment—Condemnation—Salvation*

†

**“I AM GOD...
JESUS DID NOT COME TO CONDEMN,
BUT TO SAVE THROUGH HIM.”**

Mark my words...

When we die, we face The Final Judgment...

- Judgment: to make an opinion on the righteousness or wrong of a decision.
- Condemnation: the punishment on a judged wrong decision.

In other words...

Jesus says there is no condemnation in Him, we all make wrong decisions. But His offer is salvation gained by a righteous decision to accept Him.

CHAPTER: Justice

VERSION: God's Power Balance

†

**“I AM GOD...
I AM A PERFECTLY BALANCED, JUST, AND EQUAL GOD:
THERE IS A HEAVEN AND THERE IS A HELL—
THERE IS GOOD AND THERE IS EVIL.
THERE I AM AS GOD—
AND THERE IS A DEVIL.
LET IT BE KNOWN:
THE ULTIMATE BALANCE IS—
I RULE ETERNAL LIFE AND
THE DEVIL RULES YOUR EARTHLY LIFE.
AND IN THE END OF TIME—
THE BALANCE OF POWER BELONGS TO ME.
FOR I AM THE MOST POWERFUL
BEING, MAN, AND SPIRIT IN EXISTENCE.”**

CHAPTER: Justice

VERSION: Stealing Blind — (Job 8:2-4 / Isaiah 30:18)

†

“I AM GOD...”

Job 8:2-4

²**“How long will you speak these things,
And the words of your mouth be like a strong wind?
³Does God subvert judgment?
Or does the Almighty pervert justice?
⁴If your sons have sinned against Him,
He has cast them away for their transgression.**

Isaiah 30:18

God Will Be Gracious

¹⁸**Therefore the LORD will wait, that He may be gracious to you;
And therefore He will be exalted, that He may have mercy on you.
For the LORD is a God of justice;
Blessed are all those who wait for Him.**

Mark my words...

I once took \$100 that was not mine [if it is not yours: don't take it—it may be a \$100 bill lying on the ground—if it is not yours: don't take it.] Basically and truthfully, from God's viewpoint, I stole the money. Since the appointed time of that theft, many things had gone wrong, and it ended up costing me \$200.

- A. God “curses.” He does not bless.*
 - B. It actually ends up costing you \$200.*
 - C. Stealing can be like an addiction, now you will forever have to beat it.*
 - D. With honor, trust and patience you would have made the \$100.*
- In other words...*

God, knowing I would steal—allows that something be stolen from me—just as described with murder victims [please see CHAPTER: Justice, VERSION: At the Heart]. This is God’s justice, because it is also His undeniable and unchangeable principle of “reaping and sowing”; or “you get what you give.”

My last words...

The only way to overcome the “judgment of God” or “curse” is:

- A. Wait until the appointed time or when the period of the sin has expired [in this case: when the money is completely spent].*
- B. Pray to God for mercy and forgiveness.*
- C. Sin no more. Stop the sin cycle and the addiction.*
- D. Be patient, asking properly and acting godly concerning the situation.*

CHAPTER: *Justice*

VERSION: *At the Heart—God Knows the Future of Victims' Families and Friends — (Psalm 8:6-13)*

†

**“I AM GOD...
THE WRITER IS RIGHT.”**

Psalm 8:6-13

⁶Arise, O LORD, in Your anger;
Lift Yourself up because of the rage of my enemies;
Rise up for me to the judgment You have commanded!
⁷So the congregation of the peoples shall surround You;
For their sakes, therefore, return on high.
⁸The LORD shall judge the peoples;
Judge me, O LORD, according to my righteousness,
And according to my integrity within me.

⁹Oh, let the wickedness of the wicked come to an end,
But establish the just;
For the righteous God tests the hearts and minds.
¹⁰My defense is of God,
Who saves the upright in heart.

¹¹God is a just judge,
And God is angry with the wicked every day.
¹²If he does not turn back,
He will sharpen His sword;
He bends His bow and makes it ready.
¹³He also prepares for Himself instruments of death;
He makes His arrows into fiery shafts.

Mark my words...

I cannot think of anything more troubling, or more hurtful and painful to God than the unforgiving, hateful and angry nature of a victim's family member or friend when a relative or someone they know is sinfully and criminally injured or killed.

God knows there is a cycle of violence or a path of destruction that the devil and his followers are on. And God knows the only way to stop the devil and the cycle of violence, is to beforehand have the proper and godly heart not only about the way you would treat people, but equally important; is how you would respond when the sin, death and destruction victimize you or those whom you know.

In other words...

Notice during interviews or conversations of victim's families—how 99.9% of them are vengeful, angry and more murderous than the injured or deceased victim. Do you know what God's perspective is: He allowed it to happen because He knows the relatives are going to respond in such a manner. Yes. Seldom if ever, do you see a godly, Christian, forgiving, wise, and loving response by the families. Do you know what God's perspective is: He won't allow such a sinful, injurious, or murderous act to happen to those who He knows would respond properly because God knows their heart is right with Him. In addition, He will protect and guide anyone whose family and friends are taught to [or God knows, would] react in a truly Christian way. Believe it or not, if a person has an unforgiving and sinful heart, they are truly putting their friends and family on the firing line and in the path of destruction and death.

CHAPTER: *Justice*

VERSION: *“Maintain” Justice — (Job 34:11-13)*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Job 34:11-13

**¹¹For He repays man according to his work,
And makes man to find a reward according to his way.
¹²Surely God will never do wickedly,
Nor will the Almighty pervert justice.
¹³Who gave Him charge over the earth?
Or who appointed Him over the whole world?**

Mark my words...

I hear people and nations say they need to “maintain” justice especially regarding war. A big mistake and deception are what people think justice means. Justice is not “getting even”—justice is not necessarily “fairness”; justice is equality [good / evil—right / wrong—up / down—Heaven / Hell] this is how justice works and only God is just.

In other words...

Justice is discipline more so than punishment; but fairness, balance and equality more than anything else—and to look at it from this truthful perspective will offer people the God-given opportunity to become truly just.

CHAPTER: *Killing*

VERSION: *The #1 Evil of All-Time*

†

**“I AM GOD...
KILLING IS THE 1ST EVIL, THE #1 EVIL.”**

Isaiah 56:1-2

Salvation for the Gentiles

¹Thus says the LORD:

**“Keep justice, and do righteousness,
For My salvation is about to come,
And My righteousness to be revealed.
²Blessed is the man who does this,
And the son of man who lays hold on it;
Who keeps from defiling the Sabbath,
And keeps his hand from doing any evil.”**

Mark my words...

Well before Jesus Christ was born, God first revealed to the prophet Isaiah, the truth that—the main sin that will keep a man from his salvation is the same sin that was the first sin—the evil sin of murder and the death of life.

CHAPTER: *Killing*
VERSION: *Why Do People Kill?*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Why do people kill?

- 1. It is evil [this includes hatred and anger leading to hatred].*
- 2. Self-preservation—to defend their own life or their belief their life is more valuable or meaningful than someone else’s.*

CHAPTER: Killing

VERSION: The Nature of Murder in the Old Testament



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

The nature of murder in the Old Testament is vital to understanding the meaning and value of life today. First of all, when I write “Old Testament,” or “The Old Covenant”; I would rather write God’s “First Promise.” Secondly, the First Promise is also considered the Holy Book and Scriptures of the Hebrew or Jewish people. Finally, and most importantly; it is the written Word of God, and The Father’s and Creator’s perspective, purpose and promise on life and killing for all of mankind.

In other words...

To begin with, the nature of murder in the Old Testament is the fact that the people were murderous. Ever since Eve, then Adam allowed sin and destruction to enter the nature of creation, and mankind; there has been murder. The destruction of life is death, and death at the hands of humankind is murder. Man’s sin against God allowed the devil the position and authority to bring death and murder to the plant and animal kingdom, and even the planet earth as a whole. Soon after the first birth of the children of mankind, Cain and Abel, the sons of Adam and Eve; came the first murder at the hands of man. Since that first murder, man has become more and more murderous ever since. And by the sinful nature of man, man has a killing spirit and a murderous nature.

Years and years of death, murder, and killing reigned supreme; and the truth of the matter is: mankind was actually self-destructing. And just like God saving Noah, in order to save creation and humanity from extinction; God let people over to their sinful ways, so many people are deceived and allowed to believe that murder and killing was and is part of God’s way or plan. And all too often, people will commit and justify murder based on the deceptive belief that God allowed murder...the truth is: God allowed it because mankind chose it.

CHAPTER: Killing

VERSION: The Reason for Murder in the Old Testament



**“I AM GOD...
THE TRUTH IS:
I DID ALLOW IT BECAUSE MANKIND CHOSE IT.”**

Mark my words...

Today, many will murder and kill for reasons like punishment, protection, hatred, vengeance, mercy, sacrifice, and war. And they will believe that God requires and justifies it. Especially in times of war, deceived and murderous killers will improperly look to the Old Testament or First Promise of God, and believe God allowed and ordained murder and killing. Truth be told, this could not be farther from the perfect, created truth.

In other words...

With regard to war in the days before the coming of God to earth as Christ, remember; the religious peoples and all of mankind have a murderous nature. Secondly, God would often support man in battle as “the lesser of two evils” for those of mankind who awaited a Savior. And most importantly, God also empowered those in battle to preserve the line of the human race in order to birth Jesus; basically, to keep people, the Hebrew Nation, alive for Jesus Christ to come into human existence. And in truth, from the beginning of time, the first promise of God the Father was to work within the framework of evil human existence in order to keep mankind alive long enough to save and resurrect all of creation through the birth, life and even the death of Christ.

My last words...

In the end, I have heard it wisely said: “If God could save mankind by any other way, don’t you think He would have done it apart from the death and killing of His only Son?”

CHAPTER: Killing

VERSION: The End of Murder in the New Testament

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

In the New Testament, or Final Promise of God; The Father and Creator has once again mercifully and lovingly chosen to save mankind and all of creation from self-extinction. He did so by sending His only Son Jesus to earth. As well, God the Father and Creator has mercifully and lovingly given mankind the choice to accept this way out of earthly and eternal death.

In other words...

In times of war, and in through all death, murder, and killing; Jesus is there to protect and defend, to guard against and make amends. Jesus is there to resurrect and to save. Jesus is there to live and to love, to love and to die, and to live and come back to life.

My last words...

In the final days and times of death, murder, killing, and war; these will be the combatants, cultures and religious clashes that will, again, bring about a coming of Christ; not the first coming of Christ, but the second coming of Christ.

The final world war clashes these people:

Islam—Muhammad was a war-like Old Testament (c.600 BC) prophet.

Judaism—Follow the Old Testament, First Promise; but they do not believe in Jesus Christ or the New Testament, Final Promise.

Christians—Believe in the Old Testament, First Promise; and New Testament, Final Promise; but do not always see the perspective of why there was “godly” murder, and they still believe war and murder is still justified...when, in truth, it is not.

Atheists—Do not believe in God at all; and murder is primarily “second nature.”

CHAPTER: Killing

VERSION: “Preaching the value of life, but knowing the evil of one—how can I justly kill it in order to stop it?”

†

**“I AM GOD...
YOU CAN’T.”**

CHAPTER: Killing

VERSION: No Exceptions to the Rule

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

In the Old Testament...God told the Jews and the world: “Thou shalt not kill.” Period... not—except if:

- “I’m hungry.”
- “That criminal killed a store clerk in cold blood—let’s put them to death.”
- “I’m hopeless, depressed and suicidal.”
- “The baby is unwanted.”
- “I don’t like you; you made me angry.”
- “They tried killing me first—it was self-defense.”
- “Our country wants to expand its territory...”
- “But they shot our building down...”
- And “they are only going to attack and kill us eventually....”

In other words...

In the New Testament...Jesus told the Christians: “Love God and love your neighbor.” Period... not...except if:

- “I’m hungry.”
- “That criminal killed a store clerk in cold blood—let’s put them to death.”
- “I’m hopeless, depressed and suicidal.”
- “The baby is unwanted.”
- “I don’t like you; you made me angry.”
- “They tried killing me first—it was self-defense.”
- “Our country wants to expand its territory...”
- “But they shot our building down...”
- And “they are only going to attack and kill us eventually....”

CHAPTER: Killing

VERSION: He Who Lives by the Sword...



**“I AM GOD...
IF YOU LIVE BY A MURDEROUS, KILLING SPIRIT;
BY THAT SAME SPIRIT, YOU TOO, WILL DIE.”**

Matthew 26:52

⁵²But Jesus said to him, “Put your sword in its place, for all who take the sword will perish by the sword.

Mark my words...

It is true. First and foremost, Jesus said it, so it must be true. Secondly, just witness human nature: “He who lives by the sword, shall die by the sword.”

In other words...

This might well read...He who stands by a sword [or owns a gun] will die next to or because of that sword [or gun]. The devil will deceive people into believing that Jesus meant that: if you kill someone [by the sword], I will, in turn, take your life [by a sword]. And people will wrongfully and sinfully think this is God the Creator giving permission to kill. It is not. Jesus does not give permission—Jesus makes a prediction. Basically, Jesus says: If you kill someone, expect someone to kill you.

CHAPTER: Killing

VERSION: Serial Killers Drink Budweiser

†

**“I AM GOD...
I THINK I AM GOING TO DIE.”**

Mark my words...

If I see another Budweiser ad, especially during the most watched television program of the year, the Super Bowl; demean, disrespect, desecrate, or destroy a member of the animal kingdom—I too think I’m going to die!

In other words...

It’s a known fact that most serial killers ruthlessly abuse, torture and kill animals before they satanically evolve into takers of human life. And the constant barrage of craftless, insensitive, and cruel advertising and programming that sells alcoholism and animal abuse; smoking and shopping addiction; gluttonous and carnivorous eating; sugar addiction; sex-driven, gas-guzzling polluters; and escapist, violent “entertainment” to the mindless masses; leads me to believe it’s just a matter of time before the earth is littered with road kill, empty beer cans, and cigarette butts; and the garbage of the mind spills over to the garbage on the ground.

CHAPTER: *Killing*

VERSION: *My Love for You Is Killing Me*

†

“I AM GOD...”

John 15:13

¹³Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one’s life for his friends.

Mark my words...

This not only applies to me and people personally, although this is what we should and need to do—but this is Jesus’ way of saying: “This is why I died on the cross and rose...out of love for you.”

CHAPTER: Killing
VERSION: 1 John 5:6

†

“I AM GOD...”

1 John 5:6

“This is He who came by water and blood—Jesus Christ; not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth.

Mark my words...

The Bible said we shall witness in “Spirit and truth.” The truth is: anyone who truly believes in killing another human being does not believe the truth and does not, nor can they possess the Holy Spirit.

In other words...

Even a true Christian, one who is filled with the Holy Spirit, may be tempted by evil and commit sin by killing another human being. However, if the person has no spiritual conviction, conscience, or correction; that person does not possess the Holy Spirit.

As well, if the person truly possesses the Holy Spirit, The Spirit will convict them of this sin and help them to recognize the murder was a sin. And truth be told, thank God, God said: “There is no sin that Jesus won’t forgive.”

CHAPTER: Killing

VERSION: You Cannot Be a Christian Killer



**“I AM GOD...
I HAVE GOT NEWS FOR PEOPLE:
A ‘CHRISTIAN’ WHO KILLS
IS NOT ACTING LIKE A CHRISTIAN.”**

Mark my words...

The worst judgment a “Christian” can make, is to kill a neighbor who is “lost” [without salvation through Christ]. Essentially, the “Christian” is casting that person to Hell. God Himself would not let man die in his sin—an eternally separate state—so a Christian should do the same. A Christian should live and offer the Good News of eternal life—not hate; yes, hate and sin, by murdering an unsaved soul. What a rejection of Christ this is: by not allowing the Holy Spirit to do His job and convict a lost person of their sins and then call them to salvation. What a denial then, by “Christians,” to not disciple and spread the same Word of Jesus that keeps “them” from eternal damnation. This is the hypocrisy that The Lord warned against. This is the satanic pride that had Satan cast out of Heaven for “thinking he was God.” This self-same sin shall keep all of man eternally apart from God.

The innocent life, in Christ’s eyes, is as much the person who is murdered by an “evil” enemy—as is the “evil” enemy; whom without a belief in Jesus, is slain by a “Christian,” before that “enemy” can be reconciled to God thru the love, death and resurrection of Jesus.

All are “innocent until proven guilty” and the only judgment Jesus spoke of was The Judgment He gives from the throne. Therefore, no man can be declared “guilty” until that final day. This, in Jesus’ eyes, is the only judgment “that counts.” Every action on earth pales in comparison to this Judgment. And this judgment of guilt, from The Lord, is the everlasting, final judgment. And any man’s, “Christian” or not, any man’s murderous act—is the deceptive, sinful work of Satan. It is the final, earthly judgment that wrestles the unbeliever from the Holy Spirit and declares a man “guilty” for his life.

In other words...

Jesus said, simply: "Love thy neighbor."

Jesus died so man could have eternal life. What is the difference between the Muslim, Jew, or "Christian" who kills? If it is a sin for the Muslim or Jew to kill—why is it not a sin for the "Christian"? Give any earthly explanation you want. But I have got news for you: a person who believes a "Christian" can kill—and God does not think it is a sin—or the "Christian" can kill because they'll still go to Heaven—is a person who simply does not believe in what Jesus lived for, said, and died for.

CHAPTER: Killing

VERSION: The Moral of the Story

†

“I AM GOD...

**THE MORAL OF THE STORY IS:
I CREATED, CREATED MAN TO LIVE; NOT TO DIE.
THE DEVIL BROUGHT DEATH INTO THE WORLD.
AND WHOEVER BELIEVES IN KILLING,
WHETHER OFFENSIVELY OR DEFENSIVELY,
IS FOLLOWING SATAN, PERIOD.
AND I WOULD SAY THEY ARE LIVING A LIE,
BUT THE TRUTH IS: THEY ARE DYING INSTEAD.”**

CHAPTER: *Knowledge*
VERSION: *Know It All*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

“What I know...I know I know.”

In other words...

I don't want to know everything—that's how Adam and Eve fell from grace.

CHAPTER: *Knowledge*
VERSION: *No, I Don't Know*

†

...AND GOD ONLY KNOWS.”

Mark my words...

And they come from my earthly father, Anthony: “You don’t know what you don’t know.”

In other words...

“I don’t know...I don’t want to know...I don’t need to know...all I know is God knows.”

CHAPTER: *Law*

VERSION: *The Constitution's Counselors*

†

**“I AM GOD...
I AM THE LAW.”**

Mark my words...

Lawyers are the counselors of the Constitution. And if, as I have heard Benny Hinn say, and others may believe that the Constitution of the United States is truly God-inspired—then lawyers are to the law as ministers are to the Word of God, the Bible.

CHAPTER: Life
VERSION: I Am

†

**“I AM GOD...
I CREATED LIFE.
I LIVED LIFE.
I SAID: ‘I AM THE LIFE.’
I GAVE MY LIFE.
I SAVED LIFE.
I AM LIFE.”**

CHAPTER: *Life*

VERSION: *Your Creation Is Out Of My Hands*

†

**“I AM GOD...
YOUR CREATION IS OUT OF MY HANDS—
BUT NOT OUT OF MY REACH.”**

Mark my words...

Life. In giving life, in birth, man and beast have choice: and choice is the greatest power God has given creation. And greater still, is the powerful choice to create another life—not only because this is one of God’s first commands “be fruitful and multiply”; but because, in a way, we have a power God does not have—we are doing something on this earth that not even God has complete control over. Even death, He has a hand in—but not in the core of the physical act of giving life.

In other words...

The physical act of giving or creating life is so powerful, consider that God Himself, in the person of Jesus Christ; was not only miraculously, the only human being ever born of a virgin without the seed of a male [which, in part, made the God-Child without sin]; but God could not actually be created by the fruitful conception or act between a created male and a female, a man and a woman—that act of procreation requires two people—and God, in the male form, is only one person. In reality, God, Himself, had no other way to be born. He was powerless to make Himself both male and female in order that the two could conceive God in human form [Jesus Christ, Himself]. This goes to show how much power and control created beings have over creation and the choices made when it comes to creation and procreation.



“I AM GOD...”

John 12:25

²⁵**He who loves his life will lose it, and he who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life.**

Mark my words...

Jesus said we must hate our life in this world. How do we come to hate this life?

1. *We hate the sinful way the world operates. We hate Satan and we hate sin. We hate to see God's creation destroyed. We hate all the pain and suffering in the world.*

2. *We hate ourselves when we fall into temptation and sin. We hate that in the sinful pursuit of life's material and fleshly possessions, we discover there is still a void and that there is more to life. We hate wasting our lives traveling down that wrong road and in that wrong direction.*

3. *We hate that we have to live in this earthly world and that we must wait for our life in the next world. We hate that our relationship to Christ cannot be the perfect one in Heaven. We hate this life because we realize Jesus had to come to human existence Himself to suffer and die that we might have a life to look forward to that we can love.*

In other words...

In a sense, we hate working for God and giving our life to Him, when it guarantees we will have to suffer persecutions and pain. We hate that when we become children of God, we give up our right to live our own life. We hate that there is heartache when we follow God; and if we are going to suffer anyway, we might as well have the material and fleshly possessions—and then we hate that we're only back to hating that emptiness and wasteful living of a life.

CHAPTER: Life

VERSION: Giving the Gift of Life

†

**“I AM GOD...
JESUS, MY SON, SAID THE GREATEST GIFT IS LIFE.
BY NOT KILLING MY CREATION,
YOU BASICALLY ARE GIVING, AGAIN, THE GIFT OF LIFE.”**

CHAPTER: *Life*
VERSION: *The Meaning of Life*

†

**“I AM GOD...
IN A WAY, THE MEANING OF LIFE IS DEATH.”**

Mark my words...

Charles Stanley has repeatedly said we are to be “conformed to the image of Christ.”

In other words...

God’s goal is for us to die saving the life of another(s)...that’s what Jesus did for us, and what God has been doing with creation since the beginning.

CHAPTER: *Life*

VERSION: *The Unpardonable Sin of not having the Holy Spirit*



**“I AM GOD...
THESE THREE ARE THE THREE THAT DETERMINE
THE HOLY SPIRIT AND LIFE.”**

Mark my words...

Spoken by Jesus in 5 sentences... This is the 3-step process to an eternal life with Christ.

LUKE 12:8-11

Confess Christ Before Men

⁸“Also I say to you, whoever confesses Me before men, him the Son of Man also will confess before the angels of God. ⁹But he who denies Me before men will be denied before the angels of God.

1. Belief in Jesus.

¹⁰“And anyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man, it will be forgiven him; but to him who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit, it will not be forgiven.

2. The inner presence of the Holy Spirit.

¹¹“Now when they bring you to the synagogues and magistrates and authorities, do not worry about how or what you should answer, or what you should say. ¹²For the Holy Spirit will teach you in that very hour what you ought to say.”

3. The Holy Spirit will present and represent before God at The Judgment.

CHAPTER: *Life*
VERSION: *Life vs. Eternal Life*



**“I AM GOD...
THE BATTLE IS FOR THE BODY—
BUT THE WAR IS FOR THE SOUL.”**

Mark my words...

One of the greatest deceptions Satan has placed in man's mind is the belief that there is some separation between this life and the “next” life: life and eternal life. The deception lies in the fact that there is only eternal life! The only difference is the existence of this human body. This human body is one of the two phases, levels, or existences of eternal life. Satan has 2 reasons from implanting this in our minds:

- 1. So man does not believe Jesus was an actual human being: God in a human body.*
- 2. To get man to think and believe a life in this body is all there is. This ultimately leads to selfishness of body and not selflessness. And this belief is the central factor in all murder and killing.*

In other words...

When a person's earthly body ceases to exist—when the shell dies—Satan is the apparent victor. And he believes, falsely, he was won. However, for the true Christian, when a person's soul or true spirit goes to Heaven—Satan is defeated. For God knows: the battle is for your body—but the war is for your soul.

CHAPTER: *Life Experiences*

VERSION: *Living a Light-Hearted Life — (John 8:12)*

†

“I AM GOD...”

John 8:12

¹²Then Jesus spoke to them again, saying, “I am the light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but have the light of life.”

Mark my words...

God, Jesus, is the light of the world. Jesus is looking at the start of creation and the end of time. For all eternity we shall have life.

Imagine as if we are an unborn baby. We have no previous experience on earth. God is the owner and Creator of the Universe. He owns the light. How dark and difficult knowing that man has never had “life” experience before our time.

NOTE ADDED: Thank God, He is The Light. For how difficult it would be for man to navigate through this life in the dark?

CHAPTER: Life Experiences

VERSION: The Most Difficult Experience in My Life Has Been My Experience in Life

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

*Truthfully, the most difficult thing a man ever has to experience in his life—
is the fact that he was never able to experience life.*



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

I was once trying to make a deal with a prideful and powerful man in an area I was inferior in and knew little about. However, when I heard we had a shared interest in a field I confidently knew I was superior in—I decided to challenge him in that area. With the intention of defeating him, I would insist that he make a business deal with me.

However, I then realized what may be a wiser plan. If I purposely gave less than my best effort and finished a respectable and close second, he would not be distraught and may even be energized by the closeness of my finish. And finishing second would earn the same respect as winning but may give me the sympathy of my opponent also.

In other words...

A prideful person, with the power, if defeated, would “fold up the tent,” if the stronger [you] wanted to win the war; rather you should purposefully, and wisely, finish a close second.

CHAPTER: Love

VERSION: Love Thy Neighbor

†

**“I AM GOD...
LOVE THY NEIGHBOR—
FOR EACH FRIEND WAS ONCE A STRANGER.”**

CHAPTER: Love
VERSION: People Love

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

In a way, or sense; if you want people to love you—don't be Christ-like.

In other words...

Being like Jesus will not get people to love you—but God will.

My last words...

It is often difficult and impossible to love all people. The only way to truly love them is to love their Creator. By loving Jesus, we, in turn, love our fellow man. For many, it is the love of Jesus within a person that other people will come to love. And for many others, they will not love but hate a person who is Christ-like. But the object of man's love is to love God first—then love one another; and in loving others, God loves a person even more.

CHAPTER: Love

VERSION: *How can I love, forgive, or even serve to save a sinner; especially since I don't personally know the man?*

†

**“I AM GOD...
LOVE YOUR FELLOW MAN.”**

Mark my words...

Not knowing someone personally would make it difficult to love, forgive or serve. More so, even if you did “know the man” it is still difficult [as all these points are for all men concerning all men] for a person to do those things or feel that way.

The key answer or solution is to personally get to know Jesus Christ. Not only is The Lord the person we can all “get to know” best—The Lord Jesus is the only one whom we can do and feel these things toward. And in our doing so directly toward Him, it reflects back on the way we act and feel in relation to others.

CHAPTER: Love

VERSION: Don't Love Someone until the Day They Die—Love Them until the Day You Die
— (John 15:12-14)



**“I AM GOD...
MY LOVE IS TO DIE FOR.”**

John 15:12-14

¹²This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. ¹³Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one's life for his friends. ¹⁴You are My friends if you do whatever I command you.

Mark my words...

Jesus spoke about loving one another. There are only two ways to develop this love: the love needed to “lay down one's life for one's friends.” Firstly, it is so difficult to love people the way we are sinful and evil. Think about how a hateful, mean, or angry person makes us feel...it's so difficult to love them. But Jesus tells us we need to. Now the only way to do this is through Christ. His love in us is the love we can have for another.

In other words...

There is a step to get there—the only step that can empower us to love a person the way Jesus instructs and does: is to love life...“life” covers [includes] all people. The evil reason [apart from being Chris-like] we don't love each other is because we don't value or love life. If we were to love created life—the way God does—this is to love life itself. For Jesus said: I am the way, the truth, and the life.

CHAPTER: Marriage

VERSION: Marriage is Meaningful and Meaningless



**“I AM GOD...
FOR EVERY ADAM THERE IS AN EVE—
AND FOR EVERY EVE THERE IS AN ADAM.”**

Mark 10:24–25

‘But from the beginning of the creation, God “made them male and female.’⁷“For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife,⁸and the two shall become one flesh’; so then they are no longer two, but one flesh.⁹Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate.”

Mark 12:24–25

²⁴Jesus answered and said to them, “Are you not therefore mistaken, because you do not know the Scriptures nor the power of God? ²⁵For when they rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels in heaven

Mark my words...

God’s first plan is for one man and one woman to be fruitful and multiply. As Jesus once spoke; God then planned for man and woman to be married as husband and wife, thus becoming “one.” And in the end, Jesus said God has planned no marriage—that everyone will be one body once again—as in the beginning: so too, in the end.

In other words...

While marriage is meaningful to God in the shadows of earth—it is meaningless to Him in the light of the eternity of Heaven.



“I AM GOD... REACH PERFECTION.”

Mark my words...

To begin, there is God. And God creates mankind without the use of “sex.” God “birthed” Adam from the dust of the ground and by breathing life into the first man.

From Adam, God takes the man’s rib and creates the woman, Eve. There was no “sex” involved.

With Adam and Eve, God commanded them not to have “sex” or a “sexual relationship.” He commanded these first two human beings and the first male and female to: “Be fruitful and multiply.” Therefore, from God’s viewpoint, He commands to be fruitful and multiply. And, in a sense, it just happens to be done by having intercourse; clearly, sex for creation, procreation and re-creation [not recreation].

Now, God comes to earth as a human man named Jesus Christ. And He comes with a miraculous virgin birth. Again, God does not use intercourse in order to conceive.

Lastly, Jesus Christ, the perfect man and perfect person is not married, and never has “sexual” physical relations with another person.

In other words...

Here is the natural progression of imperfection:

- Sexual intercourse in order to have children [As well: abstinence always, never contraception].
- Only during the woman’s 40-week gestation period, when the God-given goal of giving birth is in the process of being satisfied.
- Only in marriage, as a physical relationship between man and woman.

CHAPTER: Marriage

VERSION: Marriage and “Sexual” Relations



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Orgasm has come to serve two purposes: First of all, for those who spiritually follow God’s command to be fruitful and multiply and are supernatural and godly in their being; orgasm in its purest form, is a sensation created by God to reward the parents for following His command.

Imagine as a person, you knew God wanted you to birth, let’s say, two children. Imagine the sensation you would have if your body physically knew, and your mind mentally knew, you were only going to engage in sexual intercourse two times; and you knew you had God’s healthy best and wholehearted blessing? And, in the course of your lifetime, you truly only experienced that orgasmic sensation two times? The pleasure, joy, and wonderment of the experience would be miraculous and divine.

In other words...

Secondly, for those who spiritually do not follow God’s command to multiply and are more natural, humanistic, animalistic, and ungodly in their being; orgasm becomes a natural inducement, a “pleasurable sensation”, perverted by Satan to entice people to have sexual intercourse or sexual relations.

Imagine as a person you did not know the Lord. Imagine the sensation you would have if you mentally knew you were going to engage in sexual intercourse, and other perverse sexual acts, multiple and untold times. And you were perversely following Satan [and it is all perversion if it is not purely of God]. And, in the course of your lifetime, you experienced that orgasmic sensation many times? The orgasmic sensation certainly can be abused, addictive, destructive and deadly. And the ungodly use of sexual intercourse and “sex” has led to overpopulation, addiction, crime, displeasure, disease, divorce, and a host of other sins and perversions all leading to death.



**“I AM GOD...
YOU CAN’T TAKE THAT WHICH IS GIVEN.”**

Mark my words...

In death, followers of Jesus shall have life (John 10:17). And while the word martyrdom has been used to describe suicide victims: suicide or killing is not the martyrdom to believe in. The martyrdom I speak of is in the name of Jesus, by the instruction of Christ, and by His example. It occurs in two ways:

- The first is to die in defense of the Gospel of Jesus Christ (Mark 8:35). This is the type of death that 11 of the 13 disciples of Jesus suffered—having all been put to death [Judas committed suicide after he aborted his following of Christ and assisted as an accomplice in Jesus’ receiving the penalty of death; and John was the other exception as he may have died of natural causes on the island of Patmos].

- The second type of death is The Lord’s instruction to “lay down one’s life for a brother” (John 15:13). This is a sacrificial death in which we substitute our life for the sake of another (1 John 3:13-15). In both circumstances, however, we are to lose our life having never taken a single life (Exodus 20:13).

CHAPTER: *Men*

VERSION: *Man Power*

†

**“I AM GOD...
MEN:
REMEMBER THE SUPREMACY IN WHICH I CREATED YOU:**

- 1. A SON OF GOD**
- 2. A MAN**
- 3. A FATHER TO YOUR CHILD**
- 4. A HUSBAND TO YOUR WIFE**

...I AM GOD.”

Genesis 1:20-22 {KJV}

²⁰And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven.

²¹And God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good.

²²And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth.

Genesis 1:26-28 {KJV}

²⁶And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

²⁷So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

²⁸And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and

multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

Genesis 2:18 {KJV}

¹⁸And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.

Genesis 2:24 {KJV}

²⁴Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

Mark my words...

1. THE IMAGE OF A MAN—God created a man, Adam. And God gave Adam, man, the breath of life. Men were created in the image of God. When God came to earth; He came as a man, a male, Jesus. Jesus Christ is God, but He is also the Son of God. Therefore, the first priority for a man, a male, is to be a child of God. God is his Father.

2. THE FLESH OF A MAN—God created a man to have dominion or lordship over the animals, the earth, a woman, and all of creation. And any man who places himself in a position which is not in authority—is not living his life like a man. God not only created a man before a woman, giving him supremacy in order of creation; but God created a woman from a part of a man [the rib]. A woman has her place, in creation—and so too, a man. For in the beginning, God placed the man in the Garden, and He gave a woman to be a helper to the man. Therefore, the second priority for a man, a male, is to literally “be a man.”

3. THE FATHERHOOD OF A MAN—God has placed great meaning on Him being the Father. In the life of Jesus, perhaps the most meaningful thing Jesus said was “I and the Father are one—if you have seen me, you have seen the Father (John 10:30, John 14:7).” It was so meaningful to Jesus that it incited and prompted mankind to have Him killed. God wants to be a father to mankind and for a man to be His child.

In addition, God’s first directive to the animals He created was to “be fruitful and multiply”; and so it was The Creator’s first command to man: “be fruitful and multiply.” God loved creating a man. God loves a man. God loved creating men. God loves men. God loved

creating a woman. God loves a woman. God loved creating women. God loves women. Truth be told...God loves people! Therefore, the third priority for a man, a male, is to father a child and to be a father.

4. THE MARRIAGE OF A MAN—God gave the woman to man, so they could be a husband and wife. This is so meaningful to God, He says that for this union the man shall leave his own father and mother and be with his wife. Coupled with that is the importance God places on the fact that the husband and wife shall become one being. If it was a miracle for Jesus, the Son of God, to be born of a virgin; what a miracle it is for God to literally see and treat two human beings joined together as one creation. Therefore the fourth priority for a man, a male, is to be a husband to his wife.

In other words...

A problem for men lies in putting these priorities and personal positions out of order—or not truthfully “living up to” any and all of these orderly creations of God.

1. THE IMAGE OF A MAN—Jesus was a man. Satan will do everything in his power to have creation believe that God was not a man. If the devil can have a man believe this—then there is no reason to believe Jesus ever existed. A man should do everything in his power humanly possible to make certain women and other men realize in whose image men were created.

2. THE FLESH OF A MAN—When what it is to “be a man” is perverted, Satan once again “rears his ugly head” and works his sinfulness through the weaker woman to tempt, trap, and capture a man. At all times, a man must be a leader; stronger, wiser, more authoritative and more powerful than a woman and all of creation. If a man is not; then the church, government, workplace, and home will all be weakened and the power of God compromised. It is not by accident a man’s number one weakness is: woman.

3. THE FATHERHOOD OF A MAN—God is a father. He is a father to a man and to a woman. The first person a child sees who serves and acts as God, is their earthly father. If the father is a poor example of a human being, then children will have a poor impression of God the Father. For example, think of all the perversions and misguidance as a result of single-parent homes? Or, of homes where the father is worried more about being the “breadwinner” rather than being a winner? A child needs a father; not only in the sense of the relationship from a male perspective, but the fact that no child is born without the seed of a male. And that void, unfulfilled naturally, automatically leaves a child feeling a sense of loss and lost. In just the child-bearing process, things such as surrogate parenting and artificial insemination are unnatural perversions occurring when the father is removed from the creative equation.

4. *THE MARRIAGE OF A MAN*—The Bible says a man will leave his father and mother to be married to his wife—it does not say he is marrying his mother. If a man marries a woman for reasons other than love or the motherhood of their children; then he is in for a world of trouble. In fact, a man or woman should never marry for issues of coveting, security [actually insecurity], money or sex. The unwisest and the worst sin a man can commit, is to marry a woman based on their sexual relationship. And the evil twin to that, is to offer financial security for the woman with the intent it will equate to sex [that is no less than prostitution].

Now, when a man is ungodly, unstable, and “unmanly,” and does not follow God’s orderly plan for himself and his marriage [especially numbers 2 and 3; and 2 and 4]—than the worst sinful result is co-dependency, and its eventual successor; the superiority of the woman in the marriage. Basically, the man becomes so thankful just to be married, he renders himself powerless to be the leader of the marriage and the husband God created him to be.

My last words...

I personally have seen the spiritual [single and celibacy]; and the sinful [codependency, prostitution, rape] side of being a man—when a man does not faithfully follow God’s plan.

And truth be told...there are really only two callings for a man. 1. Either he remains celibate; which is the wiser, most perfected, and most pure [Note: Jesus was not married and never had sexual relations]; or a man become a married man [Note: God did give Eve to Adam, and did say: “Be fruitful and multiply.”]

The key is to be 100% certain as to which God called you to be. Because without wise, strong, celibate men [as those in some priesthoods]; and godly, strong fathers [such as Billy Graham]; there would not be a mankind for the men of ministry to minister to.

CHAPTER: *Mind*

VERSION: *Experience an 80% Increase in Brain Power*



**“I AM GOD...
DUMB OR WISE—
WHATEVER IT TAKES TO GET TO CHRIST.”**

Mark my words...

It has been discovered, and said, that man only uses 10% of his brain power. God has an answer on how to increase that to 90%.

In other words...

In the same way God requires a tithe or 10% of a person's “first fruits” [financial or otherwise]; which is just heartfelt and honestly giving God 1 / 10th of what you possess—He will reward you to the fullest possible human extent. And God uses this exact principle as an equivalent to man's brain usage. God, in turn, has given us a 1 / 10th capacity for use. If we are faithful not to give, but to give back the entirety of our 10%; God has promised and must expand or grow our gifts in a godly-sized proportion. And the “giving back” we do with our brain power, in that which we think, is done by believing and following these few words...

My last words...

And the answer is: Pray and thank God—worshipping Him to your fullest mental capacity—thanking God Almighty for the gift of thinking.



**“I AM GOD...
CHRISTIANS, MY CHILDREN,
FAIL FINANCIALLY FOR 3 REASONS:**

3. YOU DO NOT TITHE.

**2. YOU DO NOT WORK FOR ME;
YOU WORK FOR YOURSELF.**

**1. YOU WILL LOSE THE PRESENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT
IF YOUR LOVE IS TOO CLOSELY RELATED TO MONEY.
NOTHING ON EARTH MEANS MORE TO ME
THAN YOU’RE HAVING THE HOLY SPIRIT AND SALVATION.”**

“3. YOU DO NOT TITHE.”

Mark my words...

Tithe on everything; earnings, gifts, food, everything.

In other words...

One day, years ago, I received \$20.00. In fact, at the time, it may have been the only cash I had to my name. Rather than immediately tithing or giving 10% of it, or 2 dollars, to God’s people or God’s work—I held onto it tightly; grasping for thoughts in my mind of how to wisely spend the money on the food that I needed to satisfy my hunger.

As I made my way to the first of a pair of supermarkets, I also sought to make use of the coupons I had saved. As I shopped in the first store, I felt uneasy as I could not seem to find a good price on any of my usual food items, nor could I find any “on sale” for those of which I had a coupon. I spent about \$5.00 on myself, and did not feel like I had a productive shopping trip there.

I then made my way to the second grocery store; and again, I felt discomfort and now frustration in the fact I had to pay top dollar for some of my favorite foods. I again left the grocery store with very little provisions and felt unproductive.

I knew in my heart, and in the lessons of the Word of God; that I was supposed to tithe, and I did not. As a matter of fact, of all the lessons I have learned from God; tithing is one I learned later on in my life, and it has been the command I have amazingly seen God respond to or act on with the most immediacy and impact.

*At this juncture, I was determined to give that money to God's service one way or another. And the way became very clear when I reached the traffic intersection. There was a poor, downtrodden, and I presume "homeless" woman sleeping on a bench at a bus-stop. With only the \$10 remaining, without notice, I slipped \$2.00 into her pocket along with a note about Jesus. What I found profound was that the bench was being used by a ministry to spread the Gospel. The verse painted on the backboard read: **"I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me (John 14:6)..."***

I would say it was at the "crossroads" of understanding and abiding by those words of Jesus, when I felt the Holy Spirit literally lift my head and eyes upward to see, in the short distance, a third market that I had completely forgotten was located where it was. When I entered it, I was shocked and amazed to see every item that I usually partake in and eat; either, I had a discount coupon for it, or it was "on sale." And the final \$8.00 that I spent there factored out to be more like \$18.00!

In the end, my tab looked like this: I spent \$5.00 going from \$20.00-\$15.00 thinking only of myself; and feeling out of God's grace and guidance. Continuing in my disobedience, I spent \$5.00 more going from \$15.00 down to \$10.00; still thinking only of myself and continuing to feel out of God's grace and guidance. Finally, I "wised up" by tithing and giving away the \$2.00 I "owed" to God. I then spent the remaining \$8.00 on items, whereby my coupons saved me about \$7.00, and the "sale" prices saved me an additional \$3.00. All in all, I got \$28 worth of food for \$20.00, and I was able to help another human being. But most valuable of all: I got a lesson in obedience about the truth of God and God's Word that was priceless.

The moral of the story...

Man has two choices when it comes to tithing: Don't do it vs. Do it. And here are the results:

- a. An actual loss in material goods or services vs. the gain in goods or services.*
- b. Living and acting selfishly serving to help self vs. living selflessly, serving helpless others.*
- c. Existing cursed out of God's grace and love vs. existing blessed in God's grace and love.*

“2. YOU DO NOT WORK FOR ME; YOU WORK FOR YOURSELF.”

Mark my words...

People work mainly for cars, luxuries, materialism. God said He would supply food, clothing and shelter. Work first toward working with God for these things—than work for God. Work as a servant to the salvation of mankind.

“1. YOU WILL LOSE THE PRESENCE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IF YOUR LOVE IS TOO CLOSELY RELATED TO MONEY. NOTHING ON EARTH MEANS MORE TO ME THAN YOU’RE HAVING THE HOLY SPIRIT AND SALVATION.”

Mark my words...

We know about the Scripture “For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil...” This not only speaks about what money, and the love of it [or even an abundance of it, even if you don’t ‘love’ or worship it], will do to a person; but God also says “where your treasure is; there your heart will be also.” For Him, He wants your heart endowed with the presence of the Holy Spirit and the love you possess, and have, to be for Him and your fellow man.

In other words...

Everyone needs to receive and give love. However, if you find that the things money can buy you and the feelings of love you give and receive come from the heart of riches, God is not pleased and will not honor you with financial blessings. God is love. Your wealth needs to be based on your love for Him as a person. It has been said: “Money can’t buy you love.” But humanism and Satan would surely have you to believe that money could. In a sense, you can buy a feeling of love; but not the true love that comes from God, and the true love that should be given to God. In addition, if you give from your wealth, and you do so to be loved by others; God will not bless that love—but He will bless you if you give because you love others. Truth be told...Jesus is your friend, and God won’t let money come between friends.



**“I AM GOD...
MAKING AN UNGODLY AMOUNT OF MONEY IS A
SUREFIRE WAY TO BECOME SPIRITUALLY BANKRUPT.”**

Mark 10:23-31

With God All Things Are Possible

²³Then Jesus looked around and said to His disciples, “How hard it is for those who have riches to enter the kingdom of God!” ²⁴And the disciples were astonished at His words. But Jesus answered again and said to them, “Children, how hard it is for those who trust in riches to enter the kingdom of God! ²⁵It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God.”

²⁶And they were greatly astonished, saying among themselves, “Who then can be saved?”

²⁷But Jesus looked at them and said, “With men it is impossible, but not with God; for with God all things are possible.”

²⁸Then Peter began to say to Him, “See, we have left all and followed You.” ²⁹So Jesus answered and said, “Assuredly, I say to you, there is no one who has left house or brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands, for My sake and the gospel’s, ³⁰who shall not receive a hundredfold now in this time—houses and brothers and sisters and mothers and children and lands, with persecutions—and in the age to come, eternal life. ³¹But many who are first will be last, and the last first.”

Mark my words...

Truth be told...the "God" religion...be it "New Age"; "Born Again Christians"; or a world of people or "Christians" who believe in a universal, supreme, or higher being called "God" [but not Jesus Christ] is very monetary in nature and does work successfully at making money. It does. This is because the devil knows money will keep a person away from the belief and presence of Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER: Money, Money, Money

VERSION: In God We Trust

†

**“I AM GOD...
UNITED STATES:
EVEN YOUR MONEY SAYS, ‘IN GOD WE TRUST.’”**



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Nations who put God first; and their rule is based primarily on religious beliefs—these are the most blessed nations on earth. And in these days, the last days of earth, these are the nations and nations of people God will spare.

In other words...

Israel basically rules itself as a religious nation, more so than any other on earth; yet, they have denied the true God in the person of Jesus Christ. It is no wonder of the world they are headed for ruin.

So too, do many nations in the Islamic world. They are guided primarily by the rule of religion above government. The downside is: Islam worships a false god—the Muslim god is not the God of the Universe who is Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit. It is no wonder of the world they are headed for ruin.

In turn, a nation like the United States calls itself a “Christian” nation, yet Christianity does not guide the nation, but a hypocritical democratic government. And in this nation, a variety of false religions are practiced there. It is no wonder of the world they are headed for ruin.

My last words...

Because there is virtually not a true “Christian” nation on earth—it is of vital and life-saving importance that every person of the world be governed solely by and through their relationship with the Holy Spirit, Jesus Christ, and The Lord God of the Universe.

†

**“I AM GOD...
YOU LIVE LIKE KINGS—YOU MEN WHO LABOR FOR
WEALTH, THEN RETIRE TO YOUR CASTLES SEEKING TO
BE FED, ENTERTAINED AND SERVICED BY WOMEN.

AND THESE WOMEN PROSTITUTE THEMSELVES FOR
WEALTH AND RETIRE TO CASTLES SEEKING TO BE FED,
ENTERTAINED AND SERVE AS MEN.

ALL THE WHILE, OTHERS LIVE LIKE SLAVES IN COUNTRIES
A WORLD AWAY DYING TO BE FED.”**

CHAPTER: *The New Testament—God’s Final Promise*
VERSION: *The New Testament Life*



**“I AM GOD...
IN THE LIGHT OF THE NEW TESTAMENT—
IS THE NEW TESTAMENT LIFE.”**

Mark my words...

The secrets of the New Testament can be seen in God’s perspective: if, like the Old Testament, we see God doing all He can do to bring Christ into human existence—the key to understanding the New Testament; is to look at it in the light of the crucifixion, death, and resurrection of Christ—the salvation of eternal life. Jesus came at first to save our earthly life, the gift of our earthly life. The goal of the New Testament is the goal of God—and that is eternal life.

CHAPTER: Obedience

VERSION: "...Obedience more than sacrifice" — (1 Samuel 15:22)

†

"I AM GOD..."

1 Samuel 15:22

²²**So Samuel said:**

**"Has the LORD as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices,
As in obeying the voice of the LORD?
Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice,
And to heed than the fat of rams.**

Mark my words...

Believing in Christ and what Christ teaches is one thing—being disobedient [The Prophet said: "I want obedience more than sacrifice"] is something else; which means people need to at least know who God is, and how God is, in order to have a chance to go to Heaven. If people know the true God—they can use free-will to choose to be disobedient.

In other words...

Whatever God wants... "I'm playing it by ear."

CHAPTER: *The Old Testament—God’s First Promise*

VERSION: *“I can tell you the secret of the Old Testament, but I am going to have to kill you.”*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

In God permitting Cain to kill Abel; or whether God was commanding Noah to build an ark in order to save mankind from extinction; or if God was on the side of David, as the future king slew Goliath—The Old Testament, God’s First Promise, is all about keeping the bloodline of Jesus alive and saving mankind.

In other words...

Holy God → Sinful Man → To Bring About The Life Of Jesus

God had been working with sinful man to at least leave a human body, Mary, alive at the right time and place for Jesus to enter into the world as God/Human. Especially with regard to war, are the choices of The Lord most evident; if God let evil men and sinners kill godly men and women, and evil enemies withstand and defeat every human being; there would have been no human beings for God to make a way to come and save mankind in the person of Jesus. As much as God hates killing, at one time in existence, He had to take sides...thank God, no more.

My last words...

As it has been written; life and salvation leading to eternal life through Christ—is the “soul” purpose and perspective we need to look at the Old Testament through. God the Father, after man’s sin, had to work within the framework of fallen man and earth to come to earth and be born of the Virgin Mary as the Messiah...The first appearance of Jesus the Christ, was God’s “next-to-last-chance” for man. Christ’s second coming will be the last, final chance: the end of the age.

CHAPTER: The Old Testament—God's First Promise
VERSION: God's Chosen People



**“I AM GOD...
YOU ARE MY CHOSEN PERSON.
YOU ARE MY CHOSEN PEOPLE.”**

Moses Chosen...	Psalm 106:23
Jesus Prophetically Chosen...	Isaiah 42:1, 45:4, 65:9
Jesus Present...	Luke 9:35
Christians Chosen...	1 Peter 2:9

Psalm 106:23

²³Therefore He said that He would destroy them,
Had not Moses His chosen one stood before Him in the breach,
To turn away His wrath, lest He destroy them.

Isaiah 42:1

The Servant Comes to Glorify the LORD

¹“Behold! My Servant whom I uphold,
My Elect One in whom My soul delights!
I have put My Spirit upon Him;
He will bring forth justice to the Gentiles.

Isaiah 45:4

⁴For Jacob My servant's sake,
And Israel My elect,
I have even called you by your name;
I have named you, though you have not known Me.

Isaiah 65:9

**⁹I will bring forth descendants from Jacob,
And from Judah an heir of My mountains;
My elect shall inherit it,
And My servants shall dwell there.**

Luke 9:35

**³⁵And a voice came out of the cloud, saying, “This is My beloved Son.
Hear Him!”**

1 Peter 2:9

**⁹But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His
own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who
called you out of darkness into His marvelous light;**

Mark my words...

*The purpose of people born before the birth of Jesus—was to do their part in His entrance into
the world.... The purpose of people born after the death of Jesus—is to do their part in each
other’s exit from this world through and to Jesus.*

In other words...

*In a sense, the Jews are not God’s chosen people—they were God’s chosen people for the
Messiah; and then those same brethren, or people, chose to reject God, the Messiah. Now, in a
sense, Jesus’ believers are God’s chosen people. Keeping in mind, all [Jewish brethren as well]
who accept Him are God’s children. Again, the Jews were God’s chosen people. That is, until
God sent the Messiah and He was crucified, and the chosen people did not choose Him. Now,
Christians are God’s chosen people; and if Christians chose to kill their forefathers and
neighbors, they too would choose against Him when He comes again.*

CHAPTER: The Old Testament—God’s First Promise

VERSION: OT Revealed—NT Concealed [Read from ministry of Tony Alamo]

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

It has been said: “The Old Testament is revealed in the New—the New Testament is concealed in the Old.”

CHAPTER: Pastors, Priests, and Pharisees
VERSION: Yesterday, Today, and Tomorrow

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

I am fearful many of the teachers today are “old school” and they are teaching a habitually uniformed message. God’s Son was “new school”; He taught a radical and revolutionary message. If their teaching was incorrect in the past, it remains such today and they have become like the Scribes and Pharisees of yesteryear. So too, many who have been raised and lived a venerable and godly life, having fought the good fight; they are now vulnerable and open to the deception of Satan. In a sense, it took Satan decades to reach them; but now they are preaching a false gospel apart from the life and teachings of God’s Son. They are becoming like the hypocrites spoken of long ago.”

CHAPTER: *Peace*

VERSION: *Peace on Earth*



**“I AM GOD...
NOW TO THOSE WHO HEAR
THIS PRAYER AND BELIEVE IT—
WILL PEACE REST UPON THEM?”**

Matthew 10:34

“Do not think that I came to bring peace on earth. I did not come to bring peace but a sword...”

Mark my words...

Now to those who hear this prayer, and believe it, they will have peace. If you believe in your heart: Jesus is Lord; you will be crucified believing in Him but eternally rest in peace.

In other words...

Jesus knows that the sword will be directed at Him. Not only did the outright enemies of Christ want to slay Him and His believers; but certain “Christians” will turn against Him and His followers. And the truth remains; unless every person alive believes in Jesus Christ, then the entire world will die without peace.

CHAPTER: *Peace*
VERSION: *The Prince*



**“I AM GOD...
JESUS IS THE PRINCE OF AND THE PRICE FOR PEACE.”**

Mark my words...

God purchased life at a great price—life is priceless. Let us believe on The Lord Jesus Christ who laid down His life as a ransom for many and through death on a cross paid the ultimate price: His own life.

CHAPTER: *People*

VERSION: *What in Hell are 66.6% of People Thinking?*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

People, I think, think there are 3 choices or options as to their bodily existence:

Earth only—no Heaven or Hell

Earth—then Heaven only—no Hell

Earth—then Heaven or Hell

In other words...

The truth of the matter is: two of those three options are wrong. God’s honest truth is after this life is the next life, or better understood, “the rest of life”; and it will be spent in Heaven or Hell.

CHAPTER: *People*

VERSION: *The Consensus of People*

†

**“I AM GOD...
NINETY-NINE PERCENT OF PEOPLE ARE WRONG
NINETY-NINE PERCENT OF THE TIME.”**

Mark my words...

The consensus of people is 99% wrong! Today, if you ask 99-of-100 people their thoughts on God or what Jesus Christ said; odds are only 1-in-100 would know enough to tell you 1 / 100th of the truth. I also believe as time goes on, that becomes 1-in-999 people. And one day, I believe it will come down to the one-in-however many people are alive when Jesus, Himself, returns, who knows the truth of God.

In other words...

I also believe the people of the world are getting smarter, more intelligent about “improving” lives and lifestyles for self; but they are also getting dumber, and farther and farther removed from God.

CHAPTER: *Perfect Plan*

VERSION: *Self-centered Sinner's Prayer*



**“I AM GOD...
SELFISHNESS IS NOT THINKING ABOUT JESUS.”**

Mark my words...

In God's perfect plan, God did not create man on earth to be apart, at all, from God; nor for man to use man's own desires to enjoy this life for man's self. God made man to serve Him in the human form, on earth—before man does so, in soul, for eternity, in Heaven.

In other words...

God knows if Satan took 1 / 3 of the created angels with him, in his disobedience and separation from God; in all likelihood, at least 1 / 3 of an ever-increasing number of humans would also be led to rebel and disown God. So God intends for those who believe in Him to rescue and save those who are lost and dying apart from Him.

God Note: Self-centered Sinner's prayer: "I'm here to enjoy the Hell out of earth."

My last words...

You can say that again!

CHAPTER: *Performance*
VERSION: *You Can't Outperform God*

†

**“I AM GOD...
I HELP THOSE WHO CANNOT HELP THEMSELVES.”**

Mark my words...

It has been said “God helps those who help themselves.” The greater truth is that “God helps those who can’t help themselves.”

In other words...

You can take every definition, theme, or mantra of “New Age” religions, motivational programs, or humanistic teachings and they cannot reach the truth or effectiveness of the power of God through Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit.

My last words...

The peak of human performance is to keep trying to do all you can but knowing you cannot do it all—and resting on Jesus in that. It is not thinking you can do it all and it is not just resting.

Charles Stanley once wisely noted: Do whatever it is—that once it is accomplished—you know that God alone was the one who did it.

CHAPTER: Politics

VERSION: God is not Political—He Is God

†

**“I AM GOD...
I AM NOT INTERESTED IN POLITICS...
I AM INTERESTED IN PERSONS.”**

Mark my words...

Personal cleanliness is next to godliness—and politics is dirty business.

CHAPTER: Prayer

VERSION: The Jesus Way to Pray — (Matthew 6:5-13)



“I AM GOD...”

Matthew 6:5-13

The Model Prayer

⁵“And when you pray, you shall not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward. ⁶But you, when you pray, go into your room, and when you have shut your door, pray to your Father who is in the secret place; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly. ⁷And when you pray, do not use vain repetitions as the heathen do. For they think that they will be heard for their many words.

⁸“Therefore do not be like them. For your Father knows the things you have need of before you ask Him.

Mark my words...

Many people ask, “Why pray if God knows what I need?” Simply, it is because prayer is much more than just asking God for what you need. It’s about communicating and talking with Him.

Even when we “have need,” we must pray and communicate with God to make certain that what we think we need, and what we ask for; is exactly what God wants for us. Also, we are to pray to God because with everything we need there is a decision to make, and we need to know God’s will and His choice on the right and best decision for us. Lastly, we pray because prayer is basically talking to God. And it is very difficult to have a relationship with our Father, and our friend, if we don’t speak to each other. This is also why it is so vital and important to mediate and listen when we pray also.

⁹In this manner, therefore, pray:

**Our Father in heaven,
Hallowed be Your name. [*Worship*]**

**¹⁰Your kingdom come.
Your will be done [*Obedience*]**

On earth as it is in heaven.

¹¹Give us this day our daily bread. [*Ask—Notice us*: see below. Although Jesus is speaking to more than one disciple, read what The Master was really saying.*]

**¹²And forgive us our debts, [*Forgiveness*]
As we forgive our debtors.**

**¹³And do not lead us into temptation,
But deliver us from the evil one. [*Deliverance*]**

For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever.

Amen.

Mark my words...

When Jesus went off to be alone and pray to the Father. Who do you think He was praying for? For whom would the Maker and Knower Of All be praying? Having everything, what could He possibly ask from the Father?

The reason Jesus prayed was not only to seek the will of the Father, teach us how to pray, and keep in communication with God the Father, His Father; Jesus prayed to intercede for us. This is the primary reason Jesus prayed. Remember His two greatest commands...

Mark 12:29-31

²⁹“The most important one,” answered Jesus, “is this: ‘Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one. ³⁰Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength.’ ³¹The second is this: ‘Love your neighbor as yourself.’ There is no commandment greater than these.”

In other words...

As Christians, when we adopt Christ into our life to live on the inside of us; we too, need to pray the Jesus way. For man, many of us pray as a means of asking. Prayer, Jesus' way, involves worship—that was the cornerstone of His communication. Unlike us, He never had to pray for forgiveness—a vital part of our prayer life. Now the key, especially when we pray for others, is to maintain Christ-like selflessness when we are in intercession with The Father. The key that opens the door—is usually when we begin asking for ourselves. And this is the revelation that will not only have your prayers answered more fully but will also expand your prayer life and result in a greater number of prayers being answered! Inherently, as well, it will make you a more powerful intercessor in other's prayers being fulfilled. To defeat sinful, selfish human nature—we need to fully commit to the Jesus way to pray. Human nature normally has us putting our requests before those of a friend, family member, Christian, co-worker, stranger, enemy or everyone else on earth. This now, is the Jesus way to pray:

Let's say you have a need for money to buy food; rather than ask, "God, please give me the money or give me the food." Ask the Father to give to all those who need money and food [this automatically includes your personal request]. It puts you in Christ's family in need and honors His request for you to be the last and not the first. By example, again, if you are suffering in pain over the death of a loved one: "Father, please bless all those who are suffering in pain over the loss of a loved one—including me."

The more ways and people you can pray for the better. As a result, the balance will miraculously shift—you will have less needs and even better, those you prayed for will have more needs met.

CHAPTER: Prayer

VERSION: The Lord's Prayer—Jesus spoke...



**“I AM GOD...
THIS IS MY PRAYER...**

I AM THE FATHER...

Mark my words...

- Jesus: *“I and the Father are One. If you have seen Me, you have seen the Father.”*
- Jesus is the “name above all names.”
- God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Spirit.

...WHO ART IN HEAVEN...

- *This earth is not our eternal home.*
- *God, Jesus, this earth is passing.*
- *You, Jesus, have prepared us a home in Heaven where nothing destroys.*

...HALLOWED AND GREAT BE MY NAME....

- *Your name—Jesus—“the name above all names.”*
- *“Call on the name of Jesus and ye shall be saved.”*
- *Salvation comes by hearing the Word. Help us Jesus to hear yours in this your prayer, for Jesus, you are the Word.*

MY KINGDOM COME...

- *Jesus, Heaven is our eternal home.*
- *Jesus, you alone, shall reign and send your Kingdom down.*
- *Jesus, you alone are King; you are Ruler, let your will be done.*

MY WILL BE DONE...

- *Jesus, let your will, not ours be done.*
- *Jesus, your Commandments were to: “love God with all your heart,” thus we live with you and the Holy Spirit living within us...and “love thy neighbor as thyself.”*
- *We, thyself, are now living with you; loving others as you love us. Your love makes us all one.*
- *Let us love all our neighbors, let us love the people of all religions. Let us love all men. Let us love unconditionally as you love.*

...ON EARTH AS IT IS HERE IN HEAVEN....

- *Here Father and now. Let the world not deceive us; let us do as you did here on earth.*
- *Jesus, you said you only do what you see the Father do, so let us also do as He does in Heaven.*

AND GIVE YOU THIS DAY YOUR DAILY BREAD....

- *Holy Father, give us the bread; the bread you call “the bread of life.”*
- *Jesus, you said that: “is not life more than bread?”—Jesus, you said we should “not live by bread alone, but from every word from the mouth of God.” Jesus, help us to obey your Word.*
- *Jesus, forgive us for our stealing, our greed, our materialism, and the things we want and idolize more than you.*

AND FORGIVE YOU YOUR TRESPASSES...

- *Forgive us, this world. Forgive all the races, religions, and people; the elect and the chosen children; and the lost whom you left the ninety-nine for to save the one.*
- *Forgive us for our trespasses, our invasions, our murders, our hypocrisy, our anger, hatred, deceit, and all our sinful acts.*
- *Jesus, your Word declares, you said: "we are all sinners; there is not a righteous one among us."*

...AS YOU FORGIVE THOSE WHO TRESPASS AGAINST YOU....

- *Yes, Jesus, forgive the religions, the criminals, the enemies and the unbelievers who trespass and sin against us in this world who sin against you.*
- *Jesus, you died for the forgiveness of all mankind's sins.*
- *Jesus please move the sinner's heart to the Holy Spirit so they may repent to you; so you may forgive them. And give us the same Christlikeness that we may forgive those who sin.*
- *And teach us to love our enemies; for you taught that it was no great deed to love those like ourselves, but to love those who hate and persecute, not us Jesus, but you Jesus; who was persecuted for once, one and for all.*

AND LEAD YOU NOT INTO TEMPTATION...

- *Jesus, we are all astray. We are all lost, and we are all open to deception.*
- *Jesus give us spiritual strength, conviction and truth that we may not be tempted to revenge, retaliate, or sin; that we may not return an "eye-for-an-eye," but do as you instruct in your Word: "Do not resist, but accept an evil person." "If someone strikes you turn the other cheek." Jesus, I pray we don't strike back.*

...BUT DELIVER YOU FROM THE EVIL ONE....”

- *Jesus, you told us by the Word and your voice “to resist the devil and he will flee.”*
- *Jesus, we know in your Word, that only you are just. We know that you have declared that wars on earth are spiritual wars fought in the Heavens and not with the flesh. And that you will prevail.*
- *Jesus, our only deliverance from evil, and the devil’s works, come from you. You’re the saving grace; your almighty righteousness; your death, a Christian’s death; and your, our own spiritual resurrection.*
- *Jesus, help us to be still and know that you are God.*
- *Jesus, your Word states that you are “the way, the truth and the life.” And only in you Jesus, will the truth set us free. Freedom comes from the truth of putting our faith, trust, hope, and love in you: the salvation and peace for all the world.*

Amen.

In other words...

Our Father loves every creature on earth—that means every man, woman, and child in every place under the sun. That means He loves you.

CHAPTER: Prayer

VERSION: *Jesus is the Way in Prayer — (John 14:6)*



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Christians are told to title, center, and conclude prayer in “the name of Jesus.” This simply means that we are praying to Jesus. God is Jesus Christ and Jesus Christ is God. Let it be known, when we pray; the only beings that we can communicate with are God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Spirit and Satan. Any prayer to any other being; man, false God, or anything or anyone else in existence is not being directly heard by that being—it simply is not spiritually possible. However, in that prayer communication not directed to Jesus; listening in on those useless and unheard prayers is God and the devil. And basically, when you are praying to someone or something else, you are really directing your prayers to the devil. And the reason to pray “in the name of Jesus” is to distinguish or verify that your prayer is to God and not the devil.

*As well, in John 14:6, Jesus says: **“I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me...”** Not only is the way to Heaven through Jesus Christ in Spirit and body [and the body is part of the spirit of man, just as the mouth is part of the body]; but Jesus is also saying and acknowledging that man must go through Him when we pray. Basically, the only way to pray to God the Father is by praying to Jesus Christ.*

CHAPTER: Prayer

VERSION: Thank God, Man Can Pray — (1 Thessalonians 5:16-18)



“I AM GOD...”

1 Thessalonians 5:16-18

¹⁶Rejoice always, ¹⁷pray without ceasing, ¹⁸in everything give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.

Mark my words...

(1 Thessalonians 5:16) “Rejoice always...” *The first thing to always rejoice about is the fact that man is even allowed to speak to God and hear from God in the first place. Imagine that? Man has the power to speak with the Almighty Creator of All! The fact that there is prayer; is reason enough to “rejoice always.”*

(1 Thessalonians 5:17) “Pray without ceasing...” *Prayer is hearing yourself speak to God. And to pray unceasingly is to do as such: Let’s say you get out of bed to cook breakfast—now, for each person the prayer or “talking to God” will be unique, customized and different—but essentially the principle is the same: “God, thank you for today.” Walk to fridge. “Thank you for the food...God, please bless others to have provisions. God, forgive me for not taking better care of my body. God, please help me to eat right and take good care of myself...please help me to prepare this breakfast free from injury or mishap. God, please, by your name Jesus; keep the devil away from poisoning my body and mind.”*

** Please note the Jesus Way to Pray Pattern*

- Worship
- Obedience to God’s will
- Forgive and forgiveness
- Ask
- Satan

(1 Thessalonians 5:16) “...in everything give thanks; for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.” *We give thanks for prayer. Thanks for the fact, God is God, and there is a God in the first place. Thanks for Jesus Christ. Thanks for the Holy Spirit. Thanks for creation. Thanks for our being created. Thanks for others being created. Thanks for hearing prayer. Thanks for speaking and listening through prayer. And lastly, thanks for good and evil. Yes, thanks for the good and evil, the right and wrong in the world. This shows that we thank God for being in complete control. And we thank Him because He gave us the free-will that we used to mistakenly welcome sin into life. And we are thankful, because “...the will of God in Christ Jesus” is the fact that Jesus suffered the pain of death for our sins.*

CHAPTER: Prayer

VERSION: God's Protection in Prayer



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

God, through the power of the Holy Spirit and with His angels, is our constant guide and protector. It amazes me the lengths and the strength He will use to protect His children from harm. The world is a dangerous place, and for those who do not believe in Jesus; they truly take their life into their own hands. I am especially reminded of when a person is actually in prayer; how The Lord will protect them.

In other words...

I can think of many times, when I was bowing my head or deep in prayer as I walked, stood, or sat, in whatever place I was in; that danger seemed to fly right by me. And it wasn't as if I was praying for protection, but in God's love of His child in prayer; it's as if He was keeping me safe and alive, just so He and I could have that time together to speak and listen to one another.

My last words...

In my sinful state-of-being, I have also seen how the actual act of praying works; and more so, how being a Christian works to keep God's child safe and protected, free from harm and blessed. Often times, I have sought to sin or commit evil against a fellow human being when all of a sudden, the thought came over me to stop because that person believed in Jesus Christ. It is truly as if a Spirit overcame and overpowered the evil spirit that flowed through me.

Therefore, I am absolutely certain and have come to realize through my being in a sinful spiritual state; that God and His forces of good are truly there protecting and blessing the person who believes and follows Him; sparing that person from danger, destruction, and death at the hands of a person like me—a criminal sinner.

CHAPTER: *Preaching*
VERSION: *Learning from The Master*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

The wisest, most obedient thing I can do as a student of God—is not to learn from a teacher who happens to agree with my thoughts and beliefs—but study from those with which the Holy Spirit agrees.

In other words...

The wisest, most obedient thing you can do as a student—is not to learn from a teacher who happens to agree with your thoughts and beliefs—but studying from those with which the Holy Spirit agrees.

CHAPTER: Preaching

VERSION: The Soft Spoken or Silent Spirit

†

**“I AM GOD...
PREACH, DO NOT SCREAM.”**

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

If we study the history of Scripture; and the nature of life, in relation to the unchangeable characteristics of God; we might be able to forecast general events. In fact, we will never have the insight [and foremost the mind of God] and the infinite, eternal knowledge and wisdom of the Creator, God. But through dreams, visions, supernatural signs, experiences, prayer, revelations, and the Word of God; we may have a better idea on the truth, outcomes, and details of the present and future events in this life; before the written, predictable, truthful, and promised second coming of Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER: *Punishment*

VERSION: *"Half the Time..."*

†

**"I AM GOD...
PUNISHMENT IS FOR SINNERS—
DISCIPLINE IS FOR DISCIPLES."**

Mark my words...

"Half the time, I don't know how to do the right thing—but I try to do the right thing all the time."

- The Writer



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

When your personal relationship is so in union and togetherness with God, there is not a person or institution that needs [unless God so chooses] to come between you and Him. In your and my own repentance, punishments, and imprisonments; when self-imposed, God then goes to work “evening the score” for you and me especially [I’ve witnessed, personally] with the judicial system as well as the person(s) affected wrongly by my sinful or criminal actions.

By example: even if you murdered someone—come to God to confess, repent and be baptized; you will be forgiven and God will work out all your pending circumstances (jail, other possible victims, yourself) in order to restore you to a right relationship with Him—and thus give you a new, second chance at life.

In other words...

Equally, however, there is no characteristic or Commandment of God that you, in the truest sense, can come between. His Laws and principles are unchangeable. God will never change His nature for you, but He will change you.

CHAPTER: Questions and Answers

VERSION: To all the Armies of the World...

QUESTION: The Writer asks: "Why do you defend your life or retaliate?"

ANSWER: The soldier replies: "Because I love my home [country] and my family [life]."

†

**"I AM GOD...
LOVE OTHERS AS YOU LOVE YOURSELF.
THAT SAME LOVE YOU HAVE
FOR THE EXISTENCE OF YOUR OWN LIFE—
SHOULD BE THE EXACT SAME LOVE
YOU HAVE FOR OTHERS."**

Mark my words...

Jesus said: "...love others as you love yourself."

In other words...

There is never, never, a reason to take another life because that is the unconditional love He has for us.

CHAPTER: Questions and Answers

VERSION: War & Peace

QUESTION: The Writer says: "Ask yourself...Who do you believe?"

ANSWER: The Writer responds: The Government? The Authorities and the Militaries?
Presidents? Nations? The Neighbors?

†

**"I AM GOD...
IT IS YOUR BELIEFS THAT COUNT.
YOUR ACTIONS, YOUR SUPPORT;
THEY ARE THE FRUITS OF WHOM AND
WHAT YOU BELIEVE.
ARE YOU A GUN OWNER, A SOLDIER?
WHAT IS YOUR VOTE?
WHAT IS YOUR DECISION?
DO YOU SUPPORT THE TROOPS?
IS THE GOVERNMENT YOUR AUTHORITY?
ARE YOU FOR PEACE OR FOR WAR?
AND IF YOU ARE FOR PEACE, DO YOU BELIEVE JESUS?"**

CHAPTER: Questions and Answers
VERSION: Self-Defense

QUESTION: In Matthew 26:52; didn't Jesus, Himself, say it was acceptable to strike back when attacked?

Matthew 26:52

⁵²But Jesus said to him, “Put your sword in its place, for all who take the sword will perish by the sword.”

ANSWER:

†

**“I AM GOD...
NO. THIS IS A PREDICTION—NOT PERMISSION.”**

Mark my words...

No!

In other words...

God, no!

CHAPTER: *The Rapture*

VERSION: *1 Corinthians 15:50-58, 1 Thessalonians 4:17-18*

†

“I AM GOD...”

1 Corinthians 15:50-58

Our Final Victory

⁵⁰Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; nor does corruption inherit incorruption. ⁵¹Behold, I tell you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed—⁵²in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. ⁵³For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. ⁵⁴So when this corruptible has put on incorruption, and this mortal has put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written: “Death is swallowed up in victory.”

⁵⁵“O Death, where is your sting?
O Hades, where is your victory?”

⁵⁶The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law. ⁵⁷But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁵⁸Therefore, my beloved brethren, be steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, knowing that your labor is not in vain in the Lord.

1 Thessalonians 4:17-18

The Comfort of Christ's Coming

¹⁷Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord. ¹⁸Therefore comfort one another with these words.

Mark my words...

Most commonly referred to by Christians as “The Rapture”; the nature of this event has often times been misunderstood and mistaught. Much of the misunderstanding arises from a lack of knowledge of who God is and how the Holy Spirit exists and operates.

In other words...

During Armageddon, a final world war, man will destroy and kill one another and then God will react and respond with His life-saving anger. When mankind's evil and life-killing ways near the point of human extinction; basically, when God knows the final battle of Armageddon is the explosive final act away from annihilating or wiping-out man—God will intervene, as He has done times before, to save the man who remains with a faithful and true belief in His Son, Jesus.

As is this very day, and at that time, there will be two kinds of people: those filled with the Holy Spirit; and those who do not have Him but are demonically possessed. Keep in mind, only earthen created bodies [man and animals] are able to possess the Holy Spirit. Buildings and objects, and anything else; cannot.

Just as Adam relinquished and gave over spiritual dominion and control over the earth itself and its creatures—through belief in Jesus, man still has that powerful control. So until this time, men may make a choice to expel demons or invite the Holy Spirit. And man may also work to do the same in all the animals of creation. Yet, at the immediate instant The Lord returns, in addition to the man and animals who possess one of the two spirits, there will be the angels and spirits who have dominion or rule over the nations and nature on every square inch of the earth. And they too will join in the battle.

At this point, while God the Father's anger is unveiled; Jesus Christ will again come to the rescue. He will not be a man on the earth [this is the Antichrist], but when He returns from Heaven, He will be in His new and resurrected body; one that no one on earth, to this day, has

seen. Therefore, man must know who Jesus is by man's spirit; so as to not be deceived that Jesus is a man on earth, but one who appears in this new form coming from Heaven.

In addition, man must have the Holy Spirit within him because when Jesus returns only those who possess the Holy Spirit, in that instant, will gravitate or connect with Jesus. In the presence of The Lord, it will be presence of the Holy Spirit that will represent and identify that man as being a follower of Jesus who has had his sins and sinful nature forgiven and is made holy in the sight of The Lord. It will be like a magnetic force-field where holy attaches to holiness and sin attaches to sinfulness. The holy will be lifted-up, caught-up, or "raptured" and the unholy will remain on earth and will self-destruct and be destroyed along with everything and anything left on earth, including the planet itself.

In the final end, every created being filled with the Holy Spirit along with the Holy angels, will go to Heaven. And every evil-spirited or possessed animal and person will go straight to Hell....And the rest is history.



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Islamic Strong Points

- *Desire for Peace.*
- *Pray 5-times daily.*
- *The world must all follow.*
- *Die on behalf of beliefs.*
- *There are great rewards in Heaven.*

Satan’s Perversions

- *War, in the name of peace.*
- *Praying to a false god.*
- *Yes; but follow Jesus, not Muhammad.*
- *Die, yes; but do not murder self or another.*
- *Yes; but not the satanic, fleshly images of women, virgins and sinful earthly pleasures.*

Christian Strong Points

- *Jesus is Lord.*
- *The world must all follow.*
- *Willingness to defend beliefs.*
- *Die on behalf of beliefs.*
- *There are great rewards in Heaven.*

Satan’s Perversions

- *“God” [apart from the name of Jesus]*
- *Yes; but follow Jesus, none other.*
- *Murder another in defense under the name of everything, put perversely in the name of “Christianity.”*
- *Die for earthly freedoms—not give up life for spiritual reasons.*
- *Yes; but everyone does not get there simply because God loves them.*

CHAPTER: Religions
VERSION: Religious War

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

- *Being that Jesus said: “The road is narrow that leads to Heaven.”*
- *Being anti-war, alone, won’t get you to Heaven.*
- *Being a war-believing Christian—you will need forgiveness to get into Heaven.*
- *Being an anti-war Christian—now that’s the ticket! And your seat awaits you on Jesus’ throne in Heaven.*

CHAPTER: Revival

VERSION: Church Revival

†

**“I AM GOD...
REVIVAL IS NOT GETTING INTO A CHURCH,
BUT WHAT YOU GET OUT OF CHURCH.”**

CHAPTER: Revival

VERSION: Life Revival

†

**“I AM GOD...
TO RUN FOR COVER UNDER TERRORIST ATTACK OR TO
COME OUT IN A FIGHT, WITH WAR ON YOUR MIND, FOR
YOUR OWN SURVIVAL, IS NOT REVIVAL—
BUT TO COME OUT AND SHARE THE LOVE OF CHRIST
AND BE WILLING TO LAY DOWN YOUR OWN LIFE, THAT
IS TRUE REVIVAL.”**

CHAPTER: Rome

VERSION: The New Unholy Roman Empire



**“I AM GOD...
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
IS THE NEW, UNHOLY ROMAN EMPIRE.”**

Mark my words...

Many people have forecasted that there will be a revived Roman Empire that will be one of the nations that is involved in the final world war that ushers in or incites the end of creation. It is completely and totally incorrect and unspiritual to believe this Biblical beast is the European Union [EU] or some other nation. In fact, as is often the case with those who are evil and ungodly, they fail to truthfully look inward and give an accurate and honest personal assessment of themselves; but would rather look away and attackingly blame another. This is certainly why the religious and governmental leaders; the ministers; the men and women of the United States of America are blind to the knowledge and hypocritical of the sin that lies within.

In other words...

The United States will not only decline, fall and collapse—but it will certainly be an enemy to The Lord God in the final world war, Armageddon—and an enemy of The Lord's will not stand.

**THE NEW UNHOLY ROMAN EMPIRE
PAST, PRESENT AND FUTURE**

Rome was a republic (*democracy*) of free men. An Emperor (*President*), their governors, and a senate led the governing body. In just over 100 years, the Empire (2,500 miles from East to West—the same size as the United States) ruled the world. Rome had many citizens: Spaniards, Africans, Greeks and Syrians. There was extensive trade in slaves (*employees*). The inhabitants of the Empire were entertained by the Roman Games at the Coliseum (*professional sports*) and the chariot races (*horse-powered, auto racing*) at the

Circus Maximus. As for worship, the people served gods from Venus, to Mars, to Jupiter and beyond (*false religions—like the many “churches” in the country today*). The Roman (*American*) governors believed in the supremacy of the Law. The government records were safeguarded at a structure built on Capitoline Hill (*Capitol Hill*). The Roman Empire had the top fighting force in the world (*as does the US*), yet there was a great revolutionary war (*as it was in the US*). In times of foreign war, with the Germans, Arabs and Egyptians, they demanded peace, *Pax Romana*, and the rule of Law (*world democratic government*). In the Middle East, Palestine and Syria, Iraq and North Persia together formed the eastern-most parts, and it was here, where the Roman Empire bordered on the Parthian Empire, that serious trouble began...

Then the Parthians invaded Syria; and although the Roman army succeeded in holding them back, the legions brought home a dreadful plague (*perhaps not AIDS, but a new disease will develop; or, this is emblematic of biological warfare*) which swept across the Empire killing thousands of people. Times were changing. Europe had become rich, its roads, cities and workshops noisy with activity and its people prosperous and well fed. But by now the barbarians (*“terrorists,” Muslims*) beyond the borders had begun to realize that the legions could not be everywhere at once.

The Imperial power (*1991-1999, and 2000-present*) caused dishonor and unpopularity. Meanwhile, taxes increased, and The Treasury could no longer carry out its obligations (*national debt*). The people lost confidence in Roman power. The coins became less valuable. The all-important transportation network (*airlines and bankruptcy*) fell into disarray and homeowners decreased (*as homelessness increased*). The soldiers were playing at politics and sometimes fighting each other in the cause of rival pretenders to the throne (*2000 presidential election*). The barbarians drove ever deeper into Roman territory (*9-11*)...

It began to look as though old glory (*patriotism*) might return. The Empire might be battered, but still the Romans believed that just as they had always won their wars in the end, so now they would win again; the barbarians would be kept at bay, the homes would be rebuilt (*the family unit*), the army would return to its proper business. All that was needed was a good Emperor...

Unfortunately, for the Romans there were greater things taking place than they could guess, not just in Germany or Syria, but all across Eastern Europe and far away across the rolling plains of Russia. Whole nations were on the move (*European Union-EU*). Hundreds upon hundreds of new people appeared on the borders (*immigrants and aliens*). There was constant war and constant movement, and pride of place went to the fighters with the best weapons. For instance, in Persia (*China*), a breed of horse (*nuclear weapon*) was developed that a heavily armed man could ride and use to break through. The legions (*military*), the pride of Rome [*pride goes before a fall*], the unbeatable defenders of the Empire, were outmatched. Their day was done (*history tends to repeat itself*).

As so often happens in history, just as the old ideas began to lose their power, a completely new idea arose to take their place. A new religion was born in Palestine, a religion that was destined to replace all others in Europe and in many parts of Asia and Africa (*Christianity, then—“New Age” or “God,” now*).

Now the Romans (*since the separation of church and state*), allowed a lot of political freedom in the provinces (*states*) of their Empire. They naturally considered that their own ways were best and tried to persuade others to adopt Roman ideas; but if the people insisted on their own gods (*Islam, Buddhism, Hinduism, New Age and other non-Christian religions*), then that was their affair, so long as they remained peaceful and loyal to Rome. The Romans grew accustomed to seeing strange gods being worshipped in Rome itself. In fact, they welcomed it, as it meant that their capital city would be well thought of by all the gods in Heaven, known or unknown (*religious “tolerance”*)!

Thus it was that when the first followers of Christ arrived in Rome no one really noticed them, until the Christians (*Biblically based, “true Christians”*) made it plain that they were not prepared to worship any other gods, not even the divine Emperor. Such an attitude was almost unheard of in Rome. Besides, the Romans had lately taken to many kinds of fortunetelling and superstition (*psychics, astrologers, false prophets*). The Christians despised all that, and this, together with their intolerance of other gods, made them unpopular.

There was a disastrous fire (*“terrorist” attacks*) in Rome. In the search for the culprits someone put it about that the Christians (*Now, Muslims*) had started it deliberately, and for the first time (*Jihad or Holy War*) Christians (*Muslims*) were hunted down by the angry populace and put to death. The terrible persecutions had begun (*God is just*). **Matthew 5:45...God causes His sun [or Son] to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous).**

When Constantine (*George Washington*) became Emperor, two events took place that changed the course of history. The first affected Christians most. Constantine made Christianity legal (*The First Amendment of the Bill of Rights, the freedom of worship*). The second event affected everyone—the dividing of the Empire (*the Civil War*). Constantine was faced with two main problems. His first problem was the city of Rome. Italy was becoming harder to defend against the northern barbarians, and besides, there were thousands of non-Italians (*non-Americans*) who might at any time join with an invader. The Roman people were as sensitive as ever. It was increasingly difficult to keep them entertained. They were expensive to feed and at times impossible to control. Even Emperors were not safe in their own capital (*Pentagon bombing*).

Constantine’s other problem was the defense of the East (*Western World*). The Persian Empire (*China*) was highly organized and as powerful as the Romans, and their kings were as ambitious as the Roman Emperors. Any weakness on either side (*Democracy vs. Communism*) meant that the other would push forward. However, Rome was too far away for convenience when trouble threatened.

To solve these two problems, Constantine (*George Washington*) built a new Rome (*New York City, the first US capital*). It was named Constantinople (*Washington D.C, USA*). Constantinople was from the beginning a Christian city and many beautiful churches were built in it. It has been the scene of many wonderful and terrible events over the centuries since the days of its founder.

What was happening in Rome while all this was going on? Now much of the honor of being the world's most dazzling city had passed to its sister city. Signs of neglect and decay began to appear. Some of the temples of the old gods began to fall into ruin as the church of the Christians gained more and more influence. Constantine forbade the courts to condemn any person to die (*capital punishment*), although combat continued until they were finally forbidden. Parts of the water supply system began to break down, and the cost of repairing them was too high. What coins were still in circulation were now almost worthless. Taxes grew heavier still as governors struggled to keep their provinces (*states*) going; even the legions often had to go without pay (*defense spending cutbacks*). The mighty Roman Empire was falling...

My last words...

I have news for you...On September 11, 2001; there was an unbelievable fire in New York City, New York, USA. This is the beginning of the end of the Empire (New York's state motto is the "Empire State"). Also, do not the images of the destroyed framework and rubble of the World Trade Center resemble the ruins of the Roman Coliseum?

*Lastly, this spark will ignite the nuclear attack that ultimately destroys this part of the world. The Holy Bible declares: **(Revelation 8:11) The third angel sounded his trumpet, and a great star, blazing like a torch, fell from the sky on a third of the rivers and on the springs of water—the name of the star is Wormwood.** The final fire (naturally not a comet or asteroid) is called Wormwood. Did you know: Chernobyl, the site of a nuclear disaster, translates literally to Wormwood? End of story.*

PS: This Chapter and Version is written in the typeface entitled: Times New Roman.

CHAPTER: Salvation

VERSION: How to be Saved: 12-Steps to Scriptural Salvation



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Every step of the way in our life—God speaks to us about being saved. But He is an evolutionary God: a God of process and progress, a God of growth. Once He gets you to Step-A, He will then ask you to go to step-B, and so on—right until you die a death like Jesus. Once so, you will rise to Heaven as Jesus rose again.

It is Jesus’ command to “preach this Gospel...” and you are responsible to obey and go as far as the stage of the evolving Good News or Gospel you read, or the instruction you hear. Paul said: “...work out your salvation with fear and trembling.” He’s saying work toward it—don’t fall away. Don’t “dry up” as Christ said, bear a fruit that grows.

Also [ex. human relations, eating animals], some things progress toward perfection and Heaven [like salvation]; and others recess [like our bodies and certain earthly things and principles]. There is the road to perfection as well as imperfection.

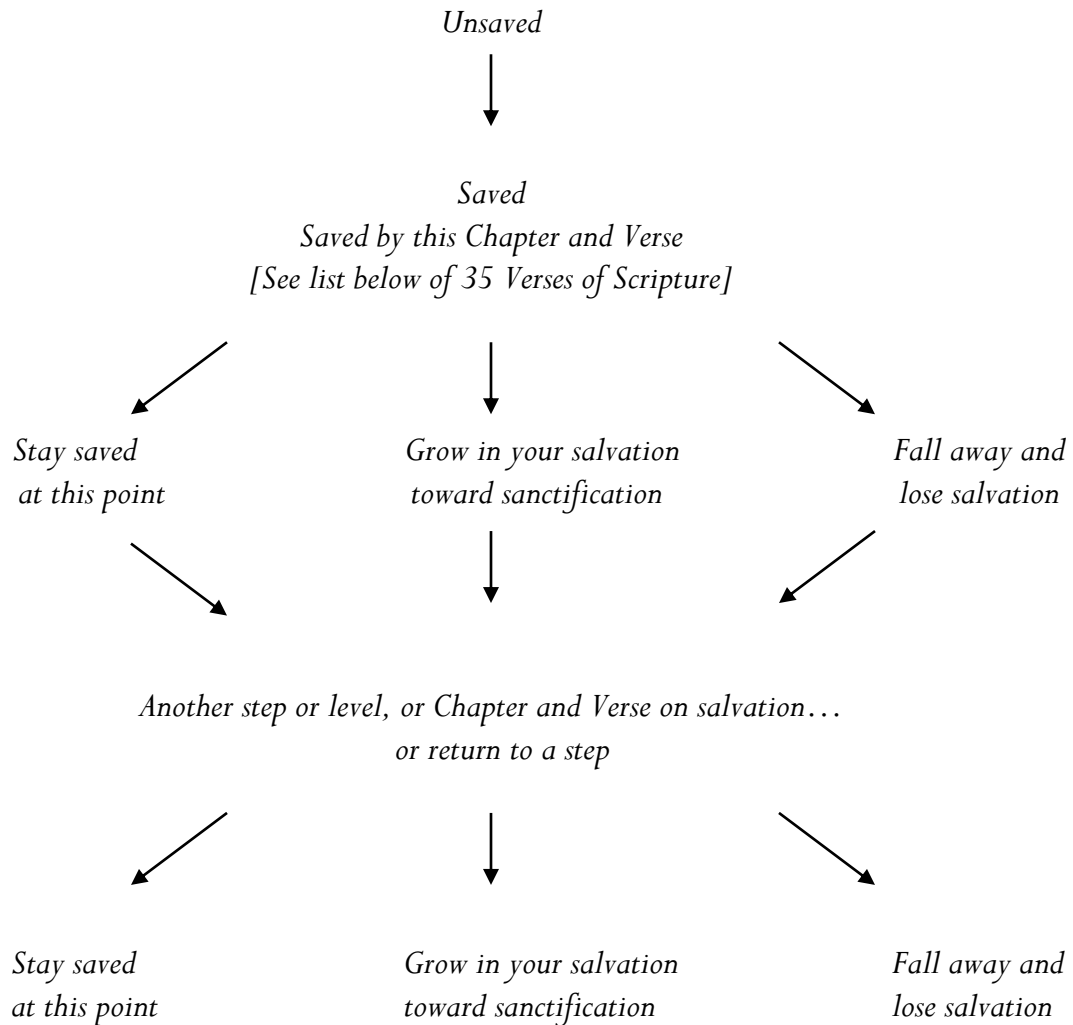
In other words...

While God is a God of process, progress, and growth—He is also a God of principle, Commandments, rule and Law. And while people are expected to grow toward eternal salvation, there are some principles and things to know that will form and help format spiritual growth.

- God is unchangeable.
- “To whom much is given, much is expected.” This means people are all on different spiritual “levels.”
- People are at different levels and people need to change—to grow—and the top level is eternity in Heaven.

- People need to change when God tells or commands them—whether by spiritual experience or personal experience with God; or by hearing the Word of God or reading the Word of God.
My last words...

Actually, this rudimentary and basic diagram will show you the process or “growth cycle” of salvation freely offered by God. And there are also 35 Biblically researched Verses of Scripture that the Holy Spirit has divinely noted that instruct on “How to be Saved.”



The 12-Steps of Scriptural Salvation

- *Hearing or Reading the Gospel*
- *Believing in God the Son*
- *Faith in the forgiveness Jesus provides*
- *Acknowledge Jesus as God*
- *Hope*
- *Grace*
- *Standing Firm*
- *Baptism*
- *Born of water and the Holy Spirit*
- *Repentance*
- *Jesus' death (Which is the foremost way)*
- *Produce fruit by repentance and believe in Jesus, not Abraham for salvation*

Hearing or Reading the Gospel of Jesus Christ

John 5:24

Acts 2:40-41

Acts 11:14

1 Corinthians 15:1-4

1 Timothy 4:16

Believing in God the Son

Luke 8:12

John 3:16

John 5:24

Acts 16:31

Romans 10:9

Hebrews 10:39

Faith in the Forgiveness Jesus Provides

Luke 7:50

Acknowledge Jesus as God

Matthew 10:32

Acts 2:21

Romans 10:9

Romans 10:13

1 Corinthians 1-2

Hope in Jesus Christ

Romans 8:24-25

Grace of God

Acts 15:11

Ephesians 2:5

Ephesians 2:8

Standing Firm in Christ

Matthew 10:22

Matthew 24:13

Baptism

Mark 16:16

John 3:5

Acts 2:38

Acts 22:16

Romans 6:22

1 Peter 3:20-21

Born Of Water and the Holy Spirit

John 6:54

Repentance

Luke 13:3

Acts 2:38

Acts 3:19

2 Peter 3:9

Jesus' Death (Which is the foremost step)

Romans 5:8-9

Produce Fruit by Repentance and Believe In Jesus, Not Abraham for Salvation

Matthew 3:10

James 2:24

Ways to Salvation
[In Biblical Order]

Matthew 3:10
Matthew 10:22
Matthew 10:32
Matthew 24:13
Mark 16:16
Luke 7:50
Luke 8:12
Luke 13:3
John 3:5
John 3:16
*John 5:24
John 6:54
Acts 2:21
*Acts 2:38
Acts 2:40-41
Acts 3:19
Acts 11:14
Acts 15:11
Acts 16:31
Acts 22:16
Romans 5:8-9
Romans 6:22
Romans 8:24-25
*Romans 10:9
Romans 10:13
1 Corinthians 1-2
1 Corinthians 15:1-4
1 Corinthians 15:1-22
Ephesians 2:5
Ephesians 2:8
1 Timothy 4:16
Hebrews 10:39
James 2:24
1 Peter 3:20-21
2 Peter 3:9

** Chapter and Verse applies to multiple actions*



“I AM GOD...”

Grace and Salvation

Titus 2:11-14

¹¹For the grace of God that brings salvation has appeared to all men. ¹²It teaches us to say “No” to ungodliness and worldly passions, and to live self-controlled, upright and godly lives in this present age, ¹³while we wait for the blessed hope—the glorious appearing of our great God and Savior, Jesus Christ, ¹⁴who gave himself for us to redeem us from all wickedness and to purify for himself a people that are his very own, eager to do what is good.

1 Peter 1:9-11

⁹for you are receiving the goal of your faith, the salvation of your souls.
¹⁰Concerning this salvation, the prophets, who spoke of the grace that was to come to you, searched intently and with the greatest care,
¹¹trying to find out the time and circumstances to which the Spirit of Christ in them was pointing when he predicted the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow.



“I AM GOD...”

Belief and Salvation

Romans 1:16

I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile.

Romans 13:11

And do this, understanding the present time. The hour has come for you to wake up from your slumber, because our salvation is nearer now than when we first believed.

Ephesians 1:13

¹³And you also were included in Christ when you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation. Having believed, you were marked in him with a seal, the promised Holy Spirit, ¹⁴who is a deposit guaranteeing our inheritance until the redemption of those who are God’s possession—to the praise of his glory.



“I AM GOD...”

Work and Salvation

Psalms 98:1

Sing to the LORD a new song, for he has done marvelous things; his right hand and his holy arm have worked salvation for him.

Isaiah 59:16

He saw that there was no one, he was appalled that there was no one to intervene; so his own arm worked salvation for him, and his own righteousness sustained him.

Isaiah 63: 4-6

⁴For the day of vengeance was in my heart, and the year of my redemption has come. ⁵I looked, but there was no one to help, I was appalled that no one gave support; so my own arm worked salvation for me, and my own wrath sustained me. ⁶I trampled the nations in my anger; in my wrath I made them drunk and poured their blood on the ground."

Philippians 2:12-13

²Therefore, my dear friends, as you have always obeyed—not only in my presence, but now much more in my absence—continue to work out your salvation with fear and trembling, ¹³for it is God who works in you to will and to act according to his good purpose.



“I AM GOD...”

1 Corinthians 3:10-17

¹⁰According to the grace of God which was given to me, as a wise master builder I have laid the foundation, and another builds on it. But let each one take heed how he builds on it. ¹¹For no other foundation can anyone lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. ¹²Now if anyone builds on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw, ¹³each one's work will become clear; for the Day will declare it, because it will be revealed by fire; and the fire will test each one's work, of what sort it is. ¹⁴If anyone's work which he has built on it endures, he will receive a reward. ¹⁵If anyone's work is burned, he will suffer loss; but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire.

¹⁶Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? ¹⁷If anyone defiles the temple of God, God will destroy him. For the temple of God is holy, which temple you are.

Mark my words...

The Apostle Paul addresses the issue of grace, belief, and works with regards to salvation. While it is the works we do for Him, it is a belief in Jesus that leads to salvation; and ultimately, it is by the grace of God whereby God will judge whether we have done enough work for Him and how truly we believe in Jesus Christ. Nevertheless, Paul also notes the final decisive factor in salvation: the inner presence of the Holy Spirit. And the fact remains it is the combination of works, belief in Jesus, God's grace, and the indwelling [not “defiling,” or denying] of God's Spirit that determines our salvation.

In other words...

Paul says: “For the temple of God is holy, which temple you are.” Basically, Paul is asking: “... Which temple are you?”

CHAPTER: Salvation
VERSION: The Do's and Don'ts



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

You are saved; you gained salvation initially by your belief in the life Jesus led and His work on the cross. The Jews would believe it was by works. Nowadays, some Christians do rest solely on God's grace—the truth of the matter is as such:

Romans 10:9

⁹that if you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you will be saved.

Now, you have the door open; but to be accepted, you need to begin your work for The Lord. There are 3 questions and 1 “don't” instructing you on your salvation.

The “don't” is don't relax solely on God's grace—God knows the devil will take advantage of this and you get caught doing nothing to serve God and your fellow man.

The 3 Questions are:

How much do you work?

The answer is: start at every minute of every day, day-to-day, for the rest of your life.

How does my work compare with someone else's?

The answer is: Jesus knows what and how much He has given you to do—and each person is a unique instrument for The Lord to use. You are not to try and “outdo” or out serve your neighbor, your goal is to satisfy The Lord; and once you have done so—He is certain minute-by-minute, day-by-day, to let you know the joy, peace, and reward that come your way when He is

pleased with you [Luke 12:48, in part, reads: ⁴⁸...For everyone to whom much is given, from him much will be required; and to whom much has been committed, of him they will ask the more.] Remember, The Lord always loves you and always provides for you. He knows all that you are, and all that He wants for you. You only need to believe, trust, and have faith in Him; and know that your creation was not your own doing: you were created to love and serve The Lord, and your life is His life; and He is always loving, and always working His love and goodness for you.

How do you know if you've worked and done enough to achieve salvation in Heaven?

The answer is: You don't. You don't need to know—all you need to know is God knows. Your belief in Jesus has the door open; He will accept you—but now your faith in His decision is all one needs to have. With this, you can have true, life-long peace and all the promises The Lord provides.

Keep in mind, once you accept Jesus; the Holy Spirit enters you. And God the Holy Spirit, He comes to work inside and through you [so long as you are truly indwelt with the Holy Spirit].

CHAPTER: Science

VERSION: What Do You Think About God?

†

“I AM GOD... EXPAND YOUR MIND.”

Mark my words...

God only knows. But what or how much does God know? God knows everything and everyone, from forever in the beginning to forever in the end.

It is a wise, revealing and reverential exercise in expanding your mind to give thought to the power, glory and greatness of God. Every second of the day, every single thing that happens, God knows about. The information and knowledge God has is infinite.

Imagine for a moment and think about the fact that God knows the exact number and place of every star; on top of that He created and made every star. At the same time, God knows the same information and the very nature of every grain of sand, every blade of grass, and every drop of water. God knows every bit of information on every computer in the world. He knows every image on every TV and every sound on the radio. God knows the composition and make-up of every particle, atom and molecule in existence, and He made and created them all. God knows every thought of every person, every word they speak, and every move they make.

Put it this way...take the brain power of every human being alive, that ever lived, and that ever will live—add them all together, and then add unlimited infinity to that knowledge and God’s brain power is greater than that.

Now, I invite you to think about two things: To begin; this great God of all power, wisdom, intellect and glory should humble you and put you in your place when you think about what you know. And to that end; you can imperfectly have the same power, knowledge and greatness God has by knowing Him.

I also welcome you to think about this: to the extent and infiniteness that God knows all things—God is equal in the goodness, joy, peace and love He gives man.

CHAPTER: Science

VERSION: *The Science of Miracles*

†

**“I AM GOD...
MIRACLES ARE GREATER THAN SCIENCE.”**

Mark my words...

Which are greater, miracles or science? Miracles have answers to science, but science has no answers for a miracle.

In other words...

Science can be explained. Miracles are unexplained.



“I AM GOD...”

Mark 5:1-13

Jesus Commands Demons, Death, and Disease

¹Then they came to the other side of the sea, to the country of the Gadarenes. ²And when He had come out of the boat, immediately there met Him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, ³who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no one could bind him, not even with chains, ⁴because he had often been bound with shackles and chains. And the chains had been pulled apart by him, and the shackles broken in pieces; neither could anyone tame him. ⁵And always, night and day, he was in the mountains and in the tombs, crying out and cutting himself with stones.

⁶When he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and worshiped Him. ⁷And he cried out with a loud voice and said, “What have I to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God that You do not torment me.”

⁸For He said to him, “Come out of the man, unclean spirit!” ⁹Then He asked him, “What is your name?”

And he answered, saying, “My name is Legion; for we are many.” ¹⁰Also he begged Him earnestly that He would not send them out of the country.

¹¹Now a large herd of swine was feeding there near the mountains. ¹²So all the demons begged Him, saying, “Send us to the swine, that we may enter them.” ¹³And at once Jesus gave them permission. Then the unclean spirits went out and entered the swine (there were about two thousand); and the herd ran violently down the steep place into the sea, and drowned in the sea.

Mark my words...

Notice what happens to the pigs once they become possessed—they perish. Satan is a destroyer, and his demons surely led the swine to self-destruction.

CHAPTER: Self-Destruction
VERSION: Judas Syndrome

†

**“I AM GOD...
IF AND WHEN YOU ARE BETRAYED BY ANYONE—
LOOK FIRST TO YOUR OWN FRIENDS, FOLLOWERS,
OR FAMILY. JUST AS WITH MY SON, THE DEVIL IS
CRAFTY AND DEVILISH ENOUGH TO KNOW THE MOST
EFFECTIVE WAY TO ATTACK, DECEIVE AND DESTROY.”**



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

I, by my very nature, am self-destructive. I believe I am more acutely aware of it than most—as evidenced by many suicidal actions, thoughts, and voluntary destructive choices. Yet, all people are self-destructive. Mankind, because of Adam’s willful choice, invited sin and destruction upon the human race. God’s choice was that the body, like the soul, be eternal in this earthly life.

*Now, this self-destructive nature in mankind is unchangeable and inevitable. Some choose unhealthy living, like smoking, or eating habits; and others choose unhealthy behavior, like driving recklessly or crime. I have found the key, and I believe the key for all man; is to live through this self-destruction. And to do so with unequaled peace is to use one’s self-destruction to serve The Lord; in suffering for The Lord, and in not only giving ourselves or our lives; but the destruction and decimation of ourselves completely to Him. In doing so, our self-destruction has a purpose. **[(John 12:21) ²⁴Most assuredly, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the ground and dies, it remains alone; but if it dies, it produces much grain.]** Our suffering has meaning. Think also of what happens when people are stricken with a serious or life-threatening illness, especially a disease [and diseases too, are also a part of humankind being destined to self-destruction]. Think how that person devotes much of the remainder of their life to finding a cure for such an illness or serving to help others in the same situation. It seems to give their life a new meaning. It gives their life value and purpose. It gives them peace. This is not done merely out of a survival instinct: that is human nature. It is more deeply born out of the spirit of serving God by following His commandment to serve others by serving Him through our self-destruction.*

CHAPTER: *Self-Extinction*
VERSION: *Knowing Noah*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

*God sent the flood and saved a godly man, Noah—for the sole reason of keeping mankind from killing themselves to extinction. Later, when God promised to never flood the earth again [(Genesis 9:11) **“Thus I establish My covenant with you: Never again shall all flesh be cut off by the waters of the flood; never again shall there be a flood to destroy the earth.”**]; God was not admitting He made a mistake.... He was saying, this time, I’m going to send my Son to keep you, the human race from self-destruction and killing yourselves to extinction. God the Father is not going to rescue man again; He has given man a choice between killing and dying, Heaven and Hell.*

CHAPTER: *Self-Extinction*

VERSION: *“And then there were two.”*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Romans 9:29

²⁹**It is just as Isaiah said previously:**

**“Unless the Lord Almighty
had left us descendants,
we would have become like Sodom,
we would have been like Gomorrah.”**

Mark my words...

Man kills man until only two humans are left. If one of the two is not a woman—then mankind ceases to exist when both of those men die.

If one kills the other, then mankind ends when God chooses to take the life of the final man.

In other words...

If a man and a woman remain, their job is just as in the beginning: increase and multiply—not kill and divide.

CHAPTER: Service
VERSION: Less-Help

†

**“I AM GOD...
IF YOU DON’T HELP THOSE WHO NEED HELP—
THEN YOU NEED HELP.”**

Leviticus 27:30-32

³⁰And all the tithe of the land, whether of the seed of the land or of the fruit of the tree, is the LORD’s. It is holy to the LORD.

³¹If a man wants at all to redeem any of his tithes, he shall add one-fifth to it. ³²And concerning the tithe of the herd or the flock, of whatever passes under the rod, the tenth one shall be holy to the LORD.

Deuteronomy 18:4-5

⁴The firstfruits of your grain and your new wine and your oil, and the first of the fleece of your sheep, you shall give him. ⁵For the LORD your God has chosen him out of all your tribes to stand to minister in the name of the LORD, him and his sons forever.

Proverbs 3:9-10

⁹Honor the LORD with your possessions,
And with the firstfruits of all your increase;
¹⁰So your barns will be filled with plenty,
And your vats will overflow with new wine.

Ezekiel 44:30

³⁰The best of all firstfruits of any kind, and every sacrifice of any kind from all your sacrifices, shall be the priest’s; also you shall give to the priest the first of your ground meal, to cause a blessing to rest on your house.

Malachi 3:8-10

Do Not Rob God

⁸“Will a man rob God?

Yet you have robbed Me!

But you say,

“In what way have we robbed You?”

In tithes and offerings.

⁹You are cursed with a curse,

For you have robbed Me,

Even this whole nation.

¹⁰Bring all the tithes into the storehouse,

That there may be food in My house,

And try Me now in this,”

Says the LORD of hosts,

“If I will not open for you the windows of heaven

And pour out for you such blessing

That there will not be room enough to receive it.

Mark my words...

Truth be told, there are 2 kinds of people—God’s children and the devil’s children. The Christian disciples’ sole purpose is to give up or spend your life serving to save the lost.

Therefore, Jesus instructs us to work for and serve Him. And when He does so, He means with all that we have and all that we are, all the time. At the very least, He commands that we give 10% of our “first fruits” back to God, in service to The Lord. And our “fruit” is not only the financial blessings we receive that we should tithe or give, but also the fruit of our being. In addition, we have been given a 24-hour day, and in that day we ought to give, at least, 10% of that time, God’s time, back to Christ.

Honestly ask yourself: have you given 1 / 10th of all that you have earned, received, or have been given from God, back to God? Have you given at least 10% of your financial earnings or income [and that is more than just the day’s wages, which is: gifts or material items we receive, financial gifts, bonuses, found money, any monetary gain]? In addition, have you given 1 / 10th of all the talents and gifts that God has freely given you to the service of The Lord? Have you given 1 / 10th of the day—that’s 2 hours and 24 minutes of your day, His day, back to Him, by serving Him?

John 12:26

²⁶If anyone serves Me, let him follow Me; and where I am, there My servant will be also. If anyone serves Me, him My Father will honor.

What kind of life is it that you lead? Who are you working for? Do you serve, and help to take care of others? Not only your own family and friends, but the entire world of people God created. Is your profession or job one whereby you supply a good or service to something that will either glorify God or help to serve in saving the eternal life of others? Do you devote your energy, your thoughts, your time, your life; to serving someone, anyone other than Satan or yourself? Or are your work, your time, and your life about doing the things you enjoy or gaining the material possessions you desire? God wants you to go to work for God. He needs laborers, employees, salespeople, managers. Yes, you will likely have to sacrifice some of your earnings and material possessions, but Jesus paid a high price to create and save your life. What you give-up now, you earn by receiving a life and place with Jesus Christ, the God of all Creation, for eternity—and that is priceless.

CHAPTER: Sex

VERSION: Sex—Sex—Sex



**“I AM GOD...
MAY THE FRUITFULNESS OF CHRIST JESUS
AND MY WORD BE A BLESSING TO YOU ALL.”**

Mark my words...

Jesus. Jesus had a way about Him when it came to a “sex” life. His way was perfect, righteous, and good. It is the way and the only way.

After investigation, introspection, and experience, it displeases me to report 99.9% of all human beings are living an adulterous lifestyle concerning human sexuality. And the greatest devilish deception of all is the teaching I would most like to focus on. It begins like this...

On that day in the garden, God commanded man to be fruitful and multiply. While Adam and Eve, the father and mother of all mankind, are considered God’s first married couple, and the parents of us all...God did not instruct Adam and Eve to have “sex.” God commanded the parents of us all—“To be fruitful and multiply.” Of course, this conception could not be accomplished without intercourse. Yet, it would later be fallen man that would call this action, the “act”: “sexual,” or “sexual intercourse.”

Now, let me elaborate. God did no way mention all the other “acts” man calls or finds “sexual.” They are unnecessary for conceiving a child. And anything apart from the command of God is a sin. God knows Jesus never acted this way. So, human beings committing all means of sexual behavior, apart from marriage, are sinful without a doubt. Yet, of course, The Master, Himself, was never married. Jesus has asked us to be married to Him. Yes, He did find provision for man and woman to be united, as one, as his disciples would later teach. (As well, the Apostle Paul spoke of carrying out one’s “duty” to one’s spouse. “Where in the world does this mean ‘sex’?” The “duty” is to “be fruitful and multiply,” as it is to love one another enough to die for one another. Nevertheless, there is a radical deception occurring among married couples today and there is an equally radical truth...

“Sex,” more appropriately, intercourse, was not given for “pleasure!” While most of fleshly humankind finds it pleasurable—Jesus never had it or condoned it. Jesus, as The Creator of the human race, did not need intercourse to reproduce, nor did He need intercourse to even be formed a man Himself. And the greatest fleshly, demonic deception of all is this paraphrase from most of today’s misguided teachers: “Sex is a gift from God...”

Let it be known...the gift from God is to be blessed to follow His commandment and re-create humankind. And if there is any mortal, fleshly “pleasure,” or gratification—that moment of orgasm, that “sexual feeling” people have is the most perverted of God’s goodness. Read me well; the physical feeling involved in orgasm should be looked upon as the bodily, reward for consummating the birthing or reproductive command. There is no godly reason or command to have “sex” apart from this will of God. Moreover, the greatest “gift” or blessing is to have followed the command of The Father and served Him to re-create the human race!

CHAPTER: Sex
VERSION: "Oh God!"

†

**"I AM GOD...
I AM GOD."**

Proverbs 10:19

**¹⁹In the multitude of words sin is not lacking,
But he who restrains his lips is wise.**

Matthew 12:36-37

³⁶But I say to you that for every idle word men may speak, they will give account of it in the day of judgment. ³⁷For by your words you will be justified, and by your words you will be condemned."

Mark my words...

A subliminal, undercover example or instance of the devil at work with his perversity of words is in pornography or illicit, adulterous sexual interaction. The overriding most common two things said when having sexual interaction is "Oh God!" or its evil twin "Oh my God!" That is nothing but the devil speaking and roaring as he works. Those groans and noises are Satan's demons screaming from within the mind, heart and spirit of a person(s) as they partake in the most highly ritualized act of satanic worship known to man.



**“I AM GOD...
ODDS ARE YOU WILL SIN—
BUT I GUARANTEE: I WILL FORGIVE.”**

Mark my words...

The odds, laws of math, and statistical probabilities that were created and are instituted by God and numerically-measured by man—are the same as to the law of the Commandments versus grace. That is: if you roll consecutive sevens, on a pair of dice—the odds of you rolling a third straight consecutive seven are still and will always be 6-1. The laws of probabilities don’t factor in at all the previous rolls.

In other words...

Once I equated this to let’s say the odds of a person ending up dead in a car accident from drinking and driving. And while I recall my natural father once telling me I was increasing my chances for an accident due to my drinking—I could actually and immediately put a stop to that; put a stop in the cycle, or the predictable outcome, by putting an immediate end to my drinking. The odds of my getting hurt after one night of drinking are no different than my odds of getting hurt the next night of drinking. Yes, I increase the attempts, but not the inherent, statistical, unchanging odds.... I note this because sin is the same way [or, in my personal case, the guilt of sin, repercussions, loss of blessings, et al, from my evil addictions]. God: through grace, mercy, forgiveness; and His unchanging, unconditionally-loving self—if we repent, change, and stop the action; will “wipe our slate clean.” We will obviously, immediately, be given an end to the attempts—but we do not need to believe, and we could never be subject to the accumulation or occurrences of that sin past—it is a new “throw of the dice.” God discontinues the sin against us, and we are given an equal chance, an unchanging chance to succeed the moment we cease and desist or quit from those sins that cost us what we lost for the day or in that moment.

CHAPTER: Sin

VERSION: *Temptation + Evil = Blessing*

†

**“I AM GOD...
ON THE OTHER SIDE OF TEMPTATION IS A BLESSING.”**

Mark my words...

This happens, without fail, every time: 100%. It is perfect and truth. To that end, it can also be concluded that: if temptation works this way, and all evil is spawned from temptation; then the greater the temptation, the greater the blessing. As well, the greater the evil: the greater the blessing, on the other side. This is the only reason why God allows evil to remain in the world.

CHAPTER: *Sin*

VERSION: *Decisions...Decisions...*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Decisions...Decisions...

Mark my words...

When it comes to making decisions, there really are only four simple choices:

It is against God’s will—I will not do it.

It is not against God’s will—I’ll do it.

It is against God’s will—but I’ll do it.

It is not against God’s will—I will not do it.

In other words...

When it comes to making decisions, there really are only two simple choices:

Good = follow God.

Evil = don’t follow God.

CHAPTER: Sin

VERSION: The Unpardonable Sin



**“I AM GOD...
TO PEOPLE WHO MIGHT SAY,
‘I HAVE COMMITTED THE UNPARDONABLE SIN.’
OKAY, THEN SAY YOU ARE SORRY AND BE FORGIVEN.”**

The “Unpardonable Sin” (Matthew 12:31-32, Mark 3:29, Luke 12:10)
John’s all sins but one (1 John 5:16)

Mark 3:28-30

The Unpardonable Sin

²⁸“Assuredly, I say to you, all sins will be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they may utter; ²⁹but he who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is subject to eternal condemnation”—³⁰because they said, “He has an unclean spirit.”

Mark my words...

There are only two spirits a human can have in their body [during their life] and at their death: either the Holy Spirit of God; or the evil, “unclean” spirit of Satan. Jesus knowingly tells man that mankind can commit any sin on earth, or any sin known to man; but the “unpardonable sin” is the one that keeps you from having, or choosing to have, the Holy Spirit within you. And this sin is not to be forgiven, because man has made the choice to not accept Jesus Christ and His Holy Spirit and it is the last decision man will ever make.

1 John 5:16

¹⁶If anyone sees his brother sinning a sin which does not lead to death, he will ask, and He will give him life for those who commit sin not leading to death. There is sin leading to death. I do not say that he should pray about that.

In other words...

Not only is the disciple John teaching on the meaningfulness, severity, and consequences of the sin of taking a life from the viewpoint of the killer; but John is speaking about the choices all human beings make when it comes to accepting Jesus Christ. Because by accepting Jesus, we are accepting and given His Holy Spirit. And it is the presence of the Holy Spirit within us, which will keep us from eternal damnation and life in Hell.

John is also saying and teaching that all the sins “under the sun,” so to speak, are forgivable. And in truth, they all need to be forgiven by God for man to reach eternal life in Heaven. The truth of the matter is: there is only one sin, and it is only mentioned once, directly, in the Bible as sin; but it is spoken of and written of throughout the eternity of Holy Scripture—and that is not accepting the forgiving and saving power of belief in Jesus Christ as God, and in Jesus’ death and returning to life—and the indwelling power and presence of Jesus Christ’s life-giving Spirit: the Holy Spirit; and the “sin” of not knowing, believing, trusting, or living and dying with Jesus Christ.

When John says “not to pray about that,” he does not mean don’t ever pray for the unsaved or lost condition of a fellow human being [this should also relay the meaningfulness on the power of prayer]; he is saying: that at the time of a persons’ earthly death, if that person does not have the Holy Spirit within them, there is no prayer among humans on earth that can save them. Their eternal destiny and judgment now go directly to The Lord. And again, God, in the person of Jesus Christ, can accept nothing unholy into Heaven. The pardon or forgiveness sacrificially offered by Jesus Christ can only be granted to a human when that person exists as both a human and a spirit, and not when they die an earthly death and their existing and eternal soul takes on a new body in eternity. Furthermore, it is only by the human God, Jesus Christ, that His sacrificial death “takes hold” or “takes effect” of sinful humans. The human Christ interacts and redeems with man’s human body. The Spirit of God interacts and redeems man’s spirit. By the time man sheds his human, earthly body, it is basically too late for the Holy Spirit to interact and inhabit that body. Simply, there is no salvation granted once a person dies. Salvation and man’s eternal destiny are man’s choice to make here on earth—right now—right now, as you read this.

CHAPTER: Spirit Possession
VERSION: "Satan be gone!"

†

"I AM GOD..."

Matthew 12:43-45

An Unclean Spirit Returns

⁴³"When an unclean spirit goes out of a man, he goes through dry places, seeking rest, and finds none. ⁴⁴Then he says, "I will return to my house from which I came.' And when he comes, he finds it empty, swept, and put in order. ⁴⁵Then he goes and takes with him seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter and dwell there; and the last state of that man is worse than the first. So shall it also be with this wicked generation."

Mark my words...

This records that spirit possession, mind you; both good [The Holy Spirit] and evil [satanic demons], is more of an ever-changing condition than it is a permanent state-of-being. This, again, goes to prove that there is no eternal security apart from the immediate, internal presence of the Holy Spirit.

As noted, [in the CHAPTER: Eternal Security, VERSION: Matthew 12:43-45], Jesus knew this all-to-well and that is why He spent so much time healing and saving those with demons.



“I AM GOD...”

Acts 1:15-19

¹⁵And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples (altogether the number of names was about a hundred and twenty), and said, ¹⁶“Men and brethren, this Scripture had to be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit spoke before by the mouth of David concerning Judas, who became a guide to those who arrested Jesus; ¹⁷for he was numbered with us and obtained a part in this ministry.”

¹⁸(Now this man purchased a field with the wages of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst open in the middle and all his entrails gushed out.

¹⁹And it became known to all those dwelling in Jerusalem; so that field is called in their own language, Akel Dama, that is, Field of Blood.)

Acts 1:25

²⁵to take part in this ministry and apostleship from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.”

Mark my words...

Judas sinned, betraying Christ. Because of his sin (Acts 1:25) and even through his remorse, Judas became demon possessed. And it was not the sin or transgression, or the lack of forgiveness from Christ, but the gateway opened by sinning against God Himself that allowed demonic spirits to invade his body that compelled and led him to commit suicide and kill himself.



“I AM GOD...”

Amazing Glasses

True story...I was having a dismal, dark day feeling completely separated from Jesus. That Saturday, as I rode my bike down the back roads, a Noah and the Ark-type of rain fell. My eyeglasses were foggy, and the rain streaked like tears. I slipped my glasses into my pocket, so ironically, I could see better. I was going to take myself to the movies to escape the weather and reality, and attempt to “clear my head.” When I realized my glasses had fallen out somewhere along the way, my depression deepened. Now, I couldn’t see the movie if I wanted to.

Sunday morning, with nothing to see and seemingly nowhere to go, I could’ve cared less if I ever saw things clearly again. In weakness, I offered up an (admittedly) heartless prayer. I asked the Father for at least one good thing to happen that day.

I didn’t think it was the Holy Spirit, but my own desperate search that moved me to backtrack miles, on my bike, in search of the glasses. Thank God, at least the skies hadn’t opened up again.

*Pedaling, with my head down, looking to the ground, there was a reflection of light. In the blink of an eye, I saw the glasses. In a flash like lightning, loud as thunder, and clear as day, I heard the Voice of God: **“I once was lost, but now am found, was blind but now I see.”** Needless to say, it was music to my ears! Isn’t God’s grace amazing?*

CHAPTER: Stories

VERSION: Joy to the World

†

“I AM GOD...”

Joy to the World

In the course of my sojourn or mission in Tampa, Florida to write a book about God, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit—one of the most profound, and meaningful things I have seen and witnessed is the spirit in people, the nature of people; especially when it comes to showing concern for their fellow man.

Let me start this storied lesson with the first in a chain of four links to the same spirit of concern for one’s fellow man; a spirit that has been thoughtful and caring; and a spirit tragically insensitive and uncaring.

I find my outer appearance to be average, while I am long-haired and bearded with a tanned face, yet not dramatically unclean; I may or may not appear like a “typical,” “homeless” person. But with a close resemblance, and the fact that I actually am “homeless,” I certainly expect that the treatment I receive will be unjust and less than humane. But I am encouraged because Jesus, Himself, was homeless and presented Himself in a manner that was unbecoming or unattractive to most people.

One day, after completing a long and difficult 12 or 13-hour day of researching and writing about God; I was at a health club exercising my body in order to add muscle to my mind and strength to my character. Suddenly, I found myself besieged by the sinful music that spewed from the club’s speaker system and my mind attacked by pain and fatigue. I laid myself down on a workout mat to meditate and restore myself for a brief moment. I wasn’t lying prone for more than 30-seconds when a club manager [with the initials JC] barked out: “No sleeping!”

My initial sense in my spirit; was that he felt: "Here is this homeless guy...and he is ruining the image of the club or taking advantage of it to rest." My second thought was how rude, unprofessional and insensitive he was. My final thought was, "What if I was injured or sick? Is that the way to treat a human being?" Now I knew that gym had a sinful and ungodly nature, and this person's actions were certainly a testimony or evidence of that.

The second link in the chain occurred at the public library, from the very same computer lab where I write this story. As I was writing and thinking about the Word of God, I bowed my head at the desk to meditate and maybe rest for 5-minutes. After about 6-minutes, the head librarian, a congenial and friendly Jewish woman approached me asking: "Are you okay?"

My first sense was, "How nice and even professional that is for you to ask." And while, to her credit, she may be more acutely or actively aware [as compared to the aforementioned man] that I am homeless; she was still kind. True, she is also aware I am writing a book about God and that reverence may have led to her caring attitude, but to me, her motivation is between The Lord Jesus and her, not I. As well, and then again, she may have just been inquiring to carry out her duty. In that case, she did so in a courteous and professional manner. And while I am certain the next words out of her mouth would have been "No sleeping in the public library!" they never came. All-in-all, I believed this is the way to treat people.

A third incident came, again, at the library, just yesterday as I write. I had exited the facility to take a break from my labor. In the 90-plus degree heat, I took my shirt off to stay cool. And to cool myself even more, I took an empty water bottle and reentered the library to fill the plastic container with some refreshing drinking water from the fountain just steps inside the entrance. Knowing it would take no more than 30 seconds, I left my shirt off. Just before the bottle was filled; the efficient and quiet, male staffer inquisitively walked toward me. He curiously asked: "Are you okay?" In response, I told him what I was doing. And while I had expected him to make a point to say, "You must have a shirt on to be in the library," he never did. I felt, "That's a nice way for him treat me." Furthermore, I realized he must have thought twice about what was going on with me, to make a connection between my well-being and my being shirtless. All-in-all, I was very grateful for the manner in which he treated me.

Now, if the expression is true: "A chain is only as strong as its weakest link"; this is the link that defines and masters all the others in this chain of events...

I was up unusually early at 5:30 AM and had decided [as is my habit] to listen to my chosen radio ministry on my portable radio. But this day, I chose to listen in the cool, air-conditioned confines of a Catholic Church that neighbors the library. As it was now 7:30 AM, by the time I came upon this modern-day temple, I thought that I could also rest and nap for an hour thereafter before promptly beginning my writing at the library at 9:00 AM.

Peacefully and thankfully, I entered an empty auxiliary or side chapel. As I began to tune in, I reclined on the cushioned pew and laid my head down on my bag. I had no issue or concern lying there in bare feet or otherwise with eyes wide open, listening to some preaching about Father God and staring at the ceiling to picture Heaven above and think about Him. I listened intently for maybe 6-minutes, when a pair of women entered the chapel apparently to prepare the altar for a mass that was to begin in an hour. As they started to drape a white, cloth cover over the tabernacle, the more dominant of the two women sternly and unceremoniously bellowed: "You can't sleep in the pews! There's no lying down in the pews! There's a mass here at 8:30, you can't be in here doing that!" Immediately responding to her concerns; I sat up, slid on my sandals and continued to listen to the radio ministry.

Moments later, the submissive of the two women re-entered and took a place on the altar ironing the white cloth like a homemaker readying a table for supper. She then expressed some negative looks and mumbled some statements in my direction, but I turned a deaf ear on her as I believed it was more important for me to listen to the message I was hearing through my headphones about the fatherly nature of God.

Without so much as a word between that woman and I, three aggressive males stomped into the chapel. Apparently, the first outspoken and domineering woman immediately summoned them after her departure and her command for me to leave.

As I sat there, one of the men pronounced: "You can't sleep in here. As a matter of fact, you can't be here. You have got to leave. We were sent by the main office to tell you to go."

I said, "Why?" As I knew for a fact the church and chapel were open to the public for those wishing to pray, attend service, or just reflect.

"Because we're telling you to," he said. Before I could speak in my defense, he continued on to say, much to my disbelief, "This church is only for those who belong."

Knowing in my heart I belonged to God, I asked him for the sake of non-Christians, the homeless, the unwanted, the rejected, and specifically I asked him in the way of a lesson: "How do you expect anyone to belong if they are not welcomed into church?" I thought to myself rhetorically: "What does it take to belong?"

"You've got to go—that's just the way it is."

Now, I don't want to elaborate or write about the lesson I gave those three "unwise" men as I stood there pointing out that whether I appeared homeless [which I don't believe I did in bandana, beard, shorts, sandals and Hawaiian shirt] the fact remains: "Jesus was homeless!" And furthermore, "This is God's house! There is nothing godly a child of God can't do in the Father's house!" I went on to quote Scripture and share with them both godly wisdom and godly, Spirit-inspired anger. I offered added explanation about a church being "God's house," and if a man could not come to The Lord in His own house, then where can he go? And most especially, that Jesus taught a wonderful truth on the treatment bestowed or given to prisoners, the sick, the hungry, the needy [and even the homeless] on how to treat them as it is a direct reflection on how to treat Him.

Sadly, my words fell on cruel and heartless ears. And worse yet, as I went forth to the church "office" to counsel the woman, she mockingly and defiantly just nodded her head repeatedly as I gave her godly instruction. In a sense, I felt I had been "tossing my pearls to swine," but I felt driven to fulfill my obligation to Jesus by preaching and teaching especially in the presence of hypocrisy, injustice and ungodliness.

In retrospect, I have learned two great lessons apart from the presence and place women have in the church, coupled by the lack of Christ-like behavior from the men and the church as well; and those two lessons were these:

One, I was disappointed in myself that I used godly anger to combat their Satanic actions, because I am drained physically and emotionally. Whereby, if I "turned the other cheek" and said not a word in defense of the Gospel; I may one day accomplish more by preaching and teaching to the greater masses from which I hope comes a greater and more faithful heart to the cause of Christ. Still, I can only count on Christ and the encouragement that His Word does not "go out void"; and that those misguided, sinful folks will "learn their lesson."

Secondly, and more importantly to me (and I pray not selfishly); was the fantastic blessing I received, not by the usual means accomplished by teaching or preaching; but from rejection and persecution! As Jesus said in the Bible: "Count it all joy when they persecute you..." God only knows, He was right! God, thank you. Thank you, Father! Because in the case of this church's sinful treatment of one of your children...I am overjoyed!

CHAPTER: *Style*
VERSION: *"Style Court"*

†

"I AM GOD..."

Ecclesiastes 1:1-2

The Vanity of Life

¹The words of the Preacher, the son of David, king in Jerusalem.

²"Vanity of vanities," says the Preacher;
"Vanity of vanities, all is vanity."

Judges 16:16-18

¹⁶And it came to pass, when she pestered him daily with her words and pressed him, so that his soul was vexed to death, ¹⁷that he told her all his heart, and said to her, "No razor has ever come upon my head, for I have been a Nazirite to God from my mother's womb. If I am shaven, then my strength will leave me, and I shall become weak, and be like any other man." ¹⁸When Delilah saw that he had told her all his heart, she sent and called for the lords of the Philistines, saying, "Come up once more, for he has told me all his heart." So the lords of the Philistines came up to her and brought the money in their hand.

Isaiah 53:1-3

The Sin-Bearing Messiah

¹Who has believed our report?

And to whom has the arm of the LORD been revealed?

²For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant,

And as a root out of dry ground.
He has no form or comeliness;
And when we see Him,
There is no beauty that we should desire Him.
³He is despised and rejected by men,
A Man of sorrows and acquainted with grief.
And we hid, as it were, our faces from Him;
He was despised, and we did not esteem Him.

Matthew 6:25-29

Do Not Worry

²⁵“Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink; nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food and the body more than clothing? ²⁶Look at the birds of the air, for they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they? ²⁷Which of you by worrying can add one cubit to his stature? ²⁸“So why do you worry about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; ²⁹and yet I say to you that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.

1 Peter 3:3-4

³Do not let your adornment be merely outward—arranging the hair, wearing gold, or putting on fine apparel—⁴rather let it be the hidden person of the heart, with the incorruptible beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in the sight of God.

Mark my words...

The more finely and expensively dressed I see a man or woman of God, the greater wariness I have for them. Just as the Scribes and Pharisees of days gone by would adorn themselves in the finest of robes; today, the pastors and preachers proudly and stylishly dress themselves in business-like suits and ties. In the day of Christ, He would wear the simplest and least-expensive clothing possible. He dressed like the poor preacher He was. And if Jesus were alive today, walking the earth clothed in human skin; He would be long-haired and unshaven, with

a tanned and weather-beaten face. He would likely be wearing a simplistic, one-piece, pocket-less gown [as a prisoner or patient might wear]; hooded and made of wool. His clothes and skin would be soiled; His sandals worn down to the heels of His feet. And just as homeless, penniless and poor as He was in His day—so too, He would appear this day.

CHAPTER: Suicide

VERSION: The Definition for “Suicide Mission”

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

My definition for “Suicide Mission”: One who, on their knees, when an antichrist points a weapon at their head; raises not his hand, but his voice in prayer to The Lord Jesus and asks God for the courage to share the unconditional love and Gospel of Christ. Then, miraculously, the Holy Spirit encourages the enemy to retreat; and the kneeling person rises to live another day. But a day later, they die at the hand of the evil one—that’s suicide. . . To believe and have faith in The Lord Jesus to follow His Holy Word and lose one’s life out of love for a brother; to again, rise and have eternal life with the Father—that is the mission.

CHAPTER: Suicide

VERSION: Non-Christian “Suicide Bombers”



**“I AM GOD...
NON-CHRISTIAN SUICIDE BOMBERS ARE NOT IN HEAVEN,
THEY ARE IN HELL;
NOT BECAUSE THEY KILLED THEMSELVES—
NOT EVEN BECAUSE THEY MURDERED ANOTHER...
BUT BECAUSE THEY DIED WITHOUT CHRIST.”**

Mark my words...

Non-Christian, “Suicide Bombers”; all Muslims [all peoples without Jesus] will be headed to Hell. A Christian believes in The Lord of Life; and chooses not to kill, ever, anyone [Islamic or otherwise] who is going to [eternal separation, Hell] a life apart from God.

In other words...

Christians choose to serve The Lord of Life and Love, and give the Good News, the Gospel of Jesus Christ, in order that all shall be saved.

CHAPTER: Temptation

VERSION: "...Temptation and the way of escape."

†

"I AM GOD..."

Mark my words...

God allows us to be tempted, so we will take the road or way provided by Him as an escape. It is this exodus He uses to send us in His direction—always for our own good in accordance with His will.

In other words...

I recall one of several occasions where God engineered the circumstances to point me in the direction, He wanted me to go. And while God will never tempt, He will allow the devil to do so in order to put us in a certain direction. The situation happened like this:

I was heading to a physical location in order to further my pursuit of sinful behavior and action. Now God allowed me to be tempted because He wanted me to get from the place I was at [Point-A] and get me to [point-D]. However, only He knew that the only way to get to point-D was by going to and through points-B and C.

The key was: He had to allow the devil to tempt me so I would advance from my starting place to the next point. But, when I got there, I needed to be obedient, wise, and strong enough not to take the wrong and sinful path leading to point-B, but the correct choice between the good path leading to point-C. For He knew, only from Point-C could I reach His blessed goal of Point-D.

B 卩
A 卩
C 卩
D

My last words...

At times, because a sinful weakness had untimely been captivating me, I had to avoid going to the actual physical location I needed to be to serve God along His path. But because of my sinfulness, I had to make a conscious choice to avoid going there. And due to my repentance and “turning from” this sin, I did not go and lost out on the blessings that awaited me there. Had I been stronger; and in a good and godly Spirit, I could have boldly and confidently continued along the path God had carefully predetermined and planned out.



**“I AM GOD...
THE TRUTH IS TIMELESS.”**

Mark my words...

There are three parts to truth. In fact there are three truths about the truth.

In other words...

1. God

God is the truth. Whatever God does or however He operates is the truth. God is the author and the maker of truth. All truth begins and ends with God.

2. Singular

The truth is singular. Just as there is one God, there is one truth. And since there is one and only one God, truth, and God of Truth—everything else imaginable and unimaginable must not be the truth and therefore must be a lie.

3. Actual Happenings

That which actually happens or is witnessed by a person is the truth [as in: “telling the truth”]. And of that which actually happens, God is at the final point in all that happens on earth. And the point is: to discover who God is and what is His truth.

CHAPTER: UFO's

VERSION: UFO's or Angels?

†

**“I AM GOD...
ANGELS—NOT UFO'S.”**

Ezekiel 10:1-22

The Glory departs From the Temple

¹And I looked, and there in the firmament that was above the head of the cherubim, there appeared something like a sapphire stone, having the appearance of the likeness of a throne. ²Then He spoke to the man clothed with linen, and said, “Go in among the wheels, under the cherub, fill your hands with coals of fire from among the cherubim, and scatter them over the city.” And he went in as I watched.

³Now the cherubim were standing on the south side of the temple when the man went in, and the cloud filled the inner court. ⁴Then the glory of the LORD went up from the cherub, and paused over the threshold of the temple; and the house was filled with the cloud, and the court was full of the brightness of the LORD's glory. ⁵And the sound of the wings of the cherubim was heard even in the outer court, like the voice of Almighty God when He speaks.

⁶Then it happened, when He commanded the man clothed in linen, saying, “Take fire from among the wheels, from among the cherubim,” that he went in and stood beside the wheels. ⁷And the cherub stretched out his hand from among the cherubim to the fire that was among the cherubim, and took some of it and put it into the hands of the man clothed with linen, who took it and went out. ⁸The cherubim appeared to have the form of a man's hand under their wings.

⁹And when I looked, there were four wheels by the cherubim, one wheel by one cherub and another wheel by each other cherub; the wheels appeared to have the color of a beryl stone. ¹⁰As for their appearance, all four looked alike—as it were, a wheel in the middle of a wheel. ¹¹When they went, they went toward any of their four directions; they did not

turn aside when they went, but followed in the direction the head was facing. They did not turn aside when they went. ¹²And their whole body, with their back, their hands, their wings, and the wheels that the four had, were full of eyes all around. ¹³As for the wheels, they were called in my hearing, “Wheel.”

¹⁴Each one had four faces: the first face was the face of a cherub, the second face the face of a man, the third the face of a lion, and the fourth the face of an eagle. ¹⁵And the cherubim were lifted up. This was the living creature I saw by the River Chebar. ¹⁶When the cherubim went, the wheels went beside them; and when the cherubim lifted their wings to mount up from the earth, the same wheels also did not turn from beside them. ¹⁷When the cherubim stood still, the wheels stood still, and when one was lifted up, the other lifted itself up, for the spirit of the living creature was in them.

¹⁸Then the glory of the LORD departed from the threshold of the temple and stood over the cherubim. ¹⁹And the cherubim lifted their wings and mounted up from the earth in my sight. When they went out, the wheels were beside them; and they stood at the door of the east gate of the LORD’s house, and the glory of the God of Israel was above them.

²⁰This is the living creature I saw under the God of Israel by the River Chebar, and I knew they were cherubim. ²¹Each one had four faces and each one four wings, and the likeness of the hands of a man was under their wings. ²²And the likeness of their faces was the same as the faces which I had seen by the River Chebar, their appearance and their persons. They each went straight forward.

CHAPTER: UFO's

VERSION: *Is There a Higher Form of Intelligence in the Universe?*

†

**“I AM GOD...
I AM INTELLIGENCE.”**

Mark my words...

To think and believe there is some higher form of being or intelligence in the universe may not be so far off when mankind is dumb enough to believe there are such things.

In other words...

God made man ...“in His own image.” And since The Lord God is the being with the highest of intelligence; so too, in our humanity, is man. To wrongly think there are UFO'S, or higher forms of intelligence would discredit the Word of God, and the creative greatness and intelligence God gave to man and wrongfully input some demonic, imaginary being between The Creator, God, and his creation, man.

CHAPTER: Universe

VERSION: The Space Beyond...

†

**“I AM GOD...
THE UNIVERSE IS NOT EXPANDING—
YOUR DISCOVERY OF IT IS.
THE UNIVERSE IS BOTH FINITE AND INFINITE—
IT IS INFINITE RIGHT TO THE POINT
IT TOUCHES MY HAND.”**

Mark my words...

Scientists are theorizing and explaining that the universe is expanding. This is false. The truth of the matter is—man’s mind, his capabilities to discover and invent; these are expanding—not the universe itself.

CHAPTER: Universe

VERSION: The Universal Creator of Creation

†

**“I AM GOD...
THE UNIVERSE,
LIKE MY CREATION OF TIME ITSELF, IS EXPONENTIAL.
THAT IS: IT IS BEING MULTIPLIED AND NOT ADDED.
SCIENTISTS TRIED APPLYING THE NATURE OF ALL MY
CREATIONS AND THEIR DISCOVERIES TO THE CREATION
OF THE UNIVERSE.
I SEEK THAT THEY SHOULD DISCOVER THE CREATOR.”**

Mark my words...

The scientist, Edwin Hubble, tried applying the nature of all of God's creations and his discoveries to the creation of the Universe. God has a different plan in mind for man as Mankind's Creator.

CHAPTER: Universe

VERSION: Space—The Futile Frontier

†

**“I AM GOD...
I COMMEND YOU FOR REACHING MARS,
BUT YOU ARE DYING, WHERE NOW WILL YOU GO?”**

CHAPTER: Universe

VERSION: *The Space Beyond That Space*

†

**“I AM GOD...
WHEN YOU SEND
A ROCKET SHIP TO PLACES
IT HAS NEVER BEEN OR EXPLORE
GALAXIES FAR BEYOND—DO NOT BELIEVE
SPACE IS EXPANDING. SPACE IS NOT EXPANDING.
THE TRUTH IS: MAN’S CAPABILITY TO GO THAT FAR
IS EXPANDING AND MAN’S
INACCURATE AND SELFISH
PERCEPTION EXPANDS WITH
IT. SPACE IS NOT INFINITE.
SPACE ENDS AT MY HAND.
YOU CAN LAUNCH A ROCKET
SHIP ONLY AS FAR AS I LET
YOU GO AND THEN THERE IS
A PLACE IN SPACE WHERE YOUR MAN AND MACHINE
WILL ALWAYS DIE—
AND IN THE SPACE BEYOND THAT SPACE—
THERE I AM.
YOU WOULD BE BETTER SERVED AS A PEOPLE TO
EXPLORE ME AND MY OUTER REACHES.
I WANT YOU IN THE SPACE IN HEAVEN I HAVE
PREPARED FOR YOU SINCE THE BEGINNING OF TIME.”**

CHAPTER: Versus [Vs.]
VERSION: Life vs. Death

†

“I AM GOD...”

Life vs. Death

Exodus 20:3

³“You shall have no other gods before Me.

Mark my words...

There is one God: Jesus Christ. And every word that comes from God is God's.

Exodus 20:13

¹³“You shall not murder.

Do not murder or kill. Did God say you may murder or kill _____? He said “You shall not...” And since God is an everlasting, eternal, and forever God...He means that you are not to murder ever and eternally.

Matthew 22:37-39

³⁷Jesus said to him, ““You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’ ³⁸This is the first and great commandment. ³⁹And the second is like it: “You shall love your neighbor as yourself.”

There is one God, and this God does not “believe in” or allow killing. And He wants you not to murder. And this God says we should love Him. This means; if we do not kill, we must be showing our love for Him. As well, if He tells us to love each other, we must show that love by not murdering each other. To God, not murdering or killing means loving.

John 3:16

¹⁶For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.

God loves you. So, He gave [He did not take] His Son. God, Himself, because love is life; gave us Jesus Christ to believe in so we may not murder or kill but have love and everlasting life.

John 15:13

¹³Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one’s life for his friends.

What? There is a greater form of love? God says, yes. The greatest love for Him and for each other is to lay down, give up, sacrifice our life for someone else, everyone else. If we love Him, and He allows any killing or murder; it must be that God wants you and I to be the ones who get murdered, or killed, and die.

1 John 4:7

⁷Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God.

To those who love; they truly know God. And love comes with not killing but laying down our own life and dying. And God says if we do this then we know the true love of God.

1 John 4:16

¹⁶And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him.

If we do not murder, but love God, each other, and life; then God says we truly know how to love, and He truly loves us. If we do love, and love life; then we are one with Him.



“I AM GOD...”

Good vs. Evil

²⁰Then God said, “Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens.” ²¹So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good. ²²And God blessed them, saying, “Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth.” ²³So the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

²⁴Then God said, “Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind”; and it was so. ²⁵And God made the beast of the earth according to its kind, cattle according to its kind, and everything that creeps on the earth according to its kind. And God saw that it was good.

²⁶Then God said, “Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.” ²⁷So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.

²⁸Then God blessed them, and God said to them, “Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth.”

²⁹And God said, “See, I have given you every herb that yields seed which is on the face of all the earth, and every tree whose fruit yields seed; to you it shall be for food. ³⁰Also, to every beast of the earth, to every bird

of the air, and to everything that creeps on the earth, in which there is life, I have given every green herb for food”; and it was so. ³¹Then God saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good. So the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

Mark my words...

So God created...And God saw that it was good....And God made ...And God saw that it was good....So God created man ...in which there is life...and indeed it was very good.

It is easy to see, read, and understand that God created life and said it was “good...very good.”

In other words...

If something is not good—it is evil...and if life is good—then death is evil. Therefore, anyone who causes death [war, death penalty, assisted suicide, and abortion]...is evil. And if you are evil, you are of the devil; in addition, he will have no reason to tempt you because you are already of his own kind.

CHAPTER: *Versus [Vs.]*

VERSION: *Strength vs. Weakness*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Strength vs. Weakness

2 Corinthians 12:9-10

⁹And He said to me, “My grace is sufficient for you, for My strength is made perfect in weakness.” Therefore most gladly I will rather boast in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. ¹⁰Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in needs, in persecutions, in distresses, for Christ’s sake. For when I am weak, then I am strong.

Mark my words...

Whatever strength, power, blessing, wisdom or truthful understanding you may have about God, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit—that is the area Satan will naturally have to oppose.

In other words...

Whatever weakness, curse, or deceptive understanding you have concerning God—naturally, Satan already has you in his possession and “living a lie.” Therefore, there is no need for him to combat or attack someone who is basically not an enemy of Christ, but an evil friend and sinful ally of his.

CHAPTER: *Versus [Vs.]*

VERSION: *Self-Destruction vs. Life*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Self-Destruction vs. Life

Mark my words...

I, myself, am sometimes and have been greatly attacked with suicidal thoughts and tendencies; basically, because the devil is aware that I absolutely and completely understand the value and meaning of life. Therefore, to know the gift of life—the meaning of life—from God and Jesus’ point-of-view, must be attacked by Satan.

In other words...

Believe it or not: people who are not suicidal, “False Christians,” let’s say, will likely believe that killing [war, death penalty, assisted suicide, and abortion] are valid and acceptable. Hypocritically, they would rather believe it is okay to murder someone else, but don’t believe it is okay to commit suicide or have murder “be aimed” upon themselves [which it is not]. The trick is: the devil does not need to tempt them to kill themselves; because for the devil, he would love nothing more than to keep that person alive so they may continue to kill others!

On the other hand: Spirit-filled Christians will be attacked in opposition to their good works and Spirit-filled blessings—those that defend life, a truly Christian defense until death; will ultimately be attacked by Satan. Basically, it is God’s truth and strength vs. Satan’s lie and weakness.

CHAPTER: *Versus [Vs.]*

VERSION: *Self-Life vs. Self-Less Life*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Self-Life vs. Self-Less Life

Matthew 10:39

³⁹He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for My sake will find it.

Mark my words...

When Jesus says, “finds his life”; He means that if you “find,” you value or love your life more than others. As well, if you know life; not your human life, but the concept or presence of life, life that was breathed into you at the human creation—you will lose it if you don’t give it up in the physical for the use and likeness of Christ’s; and for the spiritual life within you, more than the bodily physical presence of life itself.

In other words...

Jesus, again, speaks of no war, no suicide, no abortion, or no capital punishment. He speaks of nothing or no one, no life that is more meaningful than your life as being no less than His life and life in Him. And to truly find the presence of life, spiritual life, eternal life, and a Christ-like life; we must lose our life. There is no other life.

CHAPTER: Versus [Vs.]
VERSION: Sacrifice vs. Sin



“I AM GOD...”

Sacrifice vs. Sin

Hebrews 10:11-18

Christ's Death Perfects the Sanctified

¹¹And every priest stands ministering daily and offering repeatedly the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins. ¹²But this Man, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down at the right hand of God, ¹³from that time waiting till His enemies are made His footstool. ¹⁴For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified. ¹⁵But the Holy Spirit also witnesses to us; for after He had said before, ¹⁶“This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them,” ¹⁷then He adds, “Their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more.” ¹⁸Now where there is remission of these, there is no longer an offering for sin.

Mark my words...

Jesus gave up a life to save a life. Since Jesus Christ is God, and God knows everything; God must see it as righteous to do this—this must be the only way to truly save a life.

In other words...

Satan is death. And anyone who does not believe in Jesus or give-up their life for another is destined to die and join Satan in eternal death.

CHAPTER: War

VERSION: God Questions the US War in Iraq

†

**“I AM GOD...
I WOULD LIKE TO ASK YOU A QUESTION,
AND THEN GIVE YOU THE ANSWER.
WHOSE SIDE DO YOU THINK I AM ON IN THIS WAR?”**

CHAPTER: War
VERSION: Before and After

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Old Testament—First Promise

An Old Testament God, under the Old Covenant, may have taken the side of killers in the name of war...but that was for one reason and one reason only—so that 1 human being and her husband could stay alive: Mary and Joseph, the parents of God’s Son. God needed one female body for God Himself, in the person of Christ, to enter the earth through the body and virgin birth of Mary. In a sinful world, full of death and destruction, let me see you keep one single, mortal body alive for you to bring God’s Son to life.

In other words...

New Testament—Final Promise

Thank Jesus, after His birth, death, and resurrection; God has given us a New Covenant a New Testament and that is the life of Jesus Christ. What would Jesus do? Would Jesus murder, kill, or defend Himself against anybody, any single soul on earth? No! God forbid! Jesus died for you, Adam and Eve, Moses, Abraham, Noah, Mary and Joseph, the disciples, Pontius Pilate, the Caesar’s, Alexander the Great, Mussolini, Hitler, Saddam Hussein, Osama bin Laden, George Bush, Barack Obama, Reverend Billy Graham, the Pope, the False Prophet, the Antichrist and me!

My last words...

So now, let me ask you again...what and who do you believe? Rest assured, your answer will have eternal life and death consequences.

CHAPTER: *War*
VERSION: *Peace*

†

**“I AM GOD...
PEACE IS ONLY FOUND BY LOVE.”**

Mark my words...

Love, mercy, justice, and righteous anger are The Lord's to work for good and toward peace for all men.

In other words...

Vengeance, hatred, lies, fear, hypocrisy and self-righteousness are not of God, but of man and Satan.

CHAPTER: War

VERSION: "Christian" Support in the "War against Terrorism"



"I AM GOD... 'CHRISTIAN?'"

Mark my words...

A non-Christian does not follow Jesus Christ; and does not follow Jesus Christ into Heaven.

A "Christian" or "Born-Again" Christian believes they follow Jesus Christ and will follow Him into Heaven.

Now, "war and peace"; "attack and defense"; "murder and killing" are on the minds of all men. Truth be told, "war and peace"; "attack and defense"; "murder and killing" and "life and death" are also on the mind of Christ. So, ask yourself a question: "What would Jesus do?"

Remember: Jesus Christ, Himself, never, never, never killed or murdered a life in "defense" or attack. He never...

- ...did.
- ...said to...or asked any disciple to do so.
- ...defended or supported anyone who did.

As a matter of fact: He did the opposite. He loved the life of the mankind [He created] enough to lay His life down.

So, why are so many "Christians," and "Born Again" Christians in support of the killing and murder in "The War against Terrorism?"

*Now, in the Bible (Luke 11:23), Jesus said...**"He who is not with Me is against Me"**—"...against Me."*

Did you know? The dictionary defines “Anti-” as: opposed to—or against. So, “against Christ” is defined as Anti-Christ.

Now, in the Bible (1 John 2:22), the apostle said...“Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son.”

No lie...Anyone who is a “non-Christian”; or any “Christian” who kills or murders a life in “defense” or attack—now, is defined as “antichrist.”

Now you know why so many “Christians,” and “Born Again” Christians are in support of “The War against Terrorism.”

Truth be told...“Anti-Terrorist” is identical to Anti-Christ.

Now you know...don’t be deceived. Believe on The Lord Jesus Christ. Don’t be a non-Christian, “Christian” or a “Born-Again” Christian. The true followers of Jesus Christ are truly Christians.

In other words...

*Sound unrealistic? “God willing”... so is “**love thy neighbor**” when you read about it.
Sound unbelievable? “Thank God”... so is the death and life of Jesus...when you hear about it.
Sound unimaginable? “God only knows”... so is Heaven...when you think about it.*

CHAPTER: *War*

VERSION: *USA vs. Iraq—Welcome to World War III [July 17, 2004]*

†

**“I AM GOD...
I DO NOT SUPPORT THE TROOPS.
I SUPPORT MY SON JESUS BECAUSE HE DID NOT SAY:
‘GET ME DOWN FROM HERE.’”**

Mark my words...

But start World War III and He'll be back!

CHAPTER: War

VERSION: Cry War

†

**“I AM GOD...
I LOVE SADDAM AND GEORGE.
I LOVE ANYONE MY SON JESUS
LOVES ENOUGH TO DIE FOR.”**

CHAPTER: War

VERSION: War, Lord?

†

**“I AM GOD...
THEY ATTACK YOU—YOU ATTACK THEM.
THEY KILL YOU—YOU KILL THEM.
DON’T YOU KNOW THIS IS HOW WARS START?”**

CHAPTER: *War*

VERSION: *"The War against Terrorism"*

†

**"I AM GOD...
NO: TERRORISM AGAINST TERRORISM."**

CHAPTER: *War*

VERSION: “Operation Iraqi Freedom” – “Operation Enduring Freedom”

†

**“I AM GOD...
IF YOU ABIDE IN MY WORD,
YOU ARE MY DISCIPLES INDEED.”**

Mark my words...

And Jesus said: “And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”

In other words...

Operation Iraqi...Freedom to lie, cheat, steal, abort and kill each other just like the United States does.

Operation Enduring...Freedom so you may continue to lie, cheat, steal, abort and kill each other just like the United States does.

CHAPTER: War

VERSION: The Lesson of Two Evils

†

**“I AM GOD...
SADDAM MAY BE A NON-CHRISTIAN—
BUT GEORGE IS BEING AN ANTI-CHRISTIAN.”**

CHAPTER: War

VERSION: Good News Flash

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

As a human being writing from the ground called the United States, at the time of this writing, I see the war in Iraq is over. Iraq had no biological or chemical weapons, and Iraq had no weapons of mass destruction; but we do. Our evil minds terrorized and killed thousands of Iraqi people. And yet, to get Saddam Hussein “out of power”; the US is out about 100 billion dollars. Does everyone feel safer? Now, our “Christian” nation can preach this “good news” of who Jesus is to a nation that is 95% Islamic. Way to go, US!

CHAPTER: War

VERSION: War Cry

†

**“I AM GOD...
I ASK ALL PEOPLE TO LAY DOWN THEIR ARMS BECAUSE
JESUS STRETCHED OUT HIS AND DIED FOR YOU.”**

CHAPTER: War

VERSION: War or Peace

†

**“I AM GOD...
TO PRAY FOR PEACE IS MEANINGLESS
UNLESS YOU PRAY TO JESUS.”**

CHAPTER: *War*

VERSION: *“Shock and Awe”*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

“I’m in shock. This is awful.”

CHAPTER: War

VERSION: Deceit or Hate: Evil vs. Evil

†

**“I AM GOD...
I WOULD SAY SOLDIERS THINKING THEY NEED TO
MURDER TO DEFEND THEIR COUNTRY ARE LIVING A LIE,
BUT THE TRUTH IS: THEY ARE DYING INSTEAD.”**

Mark my words...

Soldiers, from any country or fighting any battle, are either deceived or hateful. At their heart, they have been lied to and deceived into believing there is a reason for war; or, at their core, they truly hate their opponent or fellow man.

The truth of the matter is: either way, from God’s viewpoint the combatants are evil vs. evil—and the truth is only evil can and will win. The fact is: God is the God of love, goodness and peace; when God fights a battle or war against evil—He fights it with love, goodness and peace—and in any war, it is the will of God that love, goodness and peace prevail.

In other words...

God created, created man to live; not to die. The devil brought death into the world. And whoever believes in killing, whether offensively or defensively, is following Satan. Period.



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

These are some choice words or sayings of others I have read or heard along the way...

In other words...

- *You can tell how big a person is by what it takes to discourage him.*
- *Wisdom has 2 parts:*
 - A. Having a lot to say*
 - B. Not saying it*
- *To be almost saved is to be totally lost.*
- *The will of God will never take you where the grace of God will not protect you.*
- *The job ahead of us is never as great as the power behind us.*
- *He who kneels before God can stand before anyone!*
- *A clean conscious makes a soft pillow.*
- *Exercise daily...walk with The Lord!*
- *God doesn't want shares of your life; He wants controlling interest.*
- *Don't wait for 6 strong men to take you to church.*

CHAPTER: *Women*

VERSION: *“Womb”-man Power*

†

**“I AM GOD...
WOMEN:
REMEMBER THE SUPREMACY IN WHICH I CREATED MEN:**

- 1. A SON OF GOD**
- 2. A MAN**
- 3. A FATHER TO YOUR CHILD**
- 4. A HUSBAND TO YOUR WIFE**

AND IN THE ORDER I CREATED WOMEN:

- 1. A CHILD OF GOD**
- 2. A WOMAN**
- 3. A MOTHER TO YOUR CHILD**
- 4. A WIFE TO YOUR HUSBAND**

...I AM GOD.”

Mark my words...

Women, you may review what God has said to His men—so you know what the life and role of a woman is in the history of creation.

CHAPTER: *Women*

VERSION: *How to be a Wife like Christ*



**“I AM GOD...
BE A WIFE LIKE CHRIST.”**

Mark my words...

I have always found the work and evangelism of Mr. Billy Graham to often be God-ordained and inspiring. Yet, when I read a biography on Mr. Graham, the most blessed thing I may have received from it was an education on the life of Mrs. Billy Graham and how to be a godly wife.

CHAPTER: Women

VERSION: Women's Rights

†

**“I AM GOD...
WOMEN HAVE RIGHTS:
THE RIGHT TO LOVE JESUS AND FOLLOW HIM.”**

CHAPTER: Women

VERSION: Attitude vs. Existence

†

“I AM GOD...”

Genesis 2:23

²³And Adam said:

**“This is now bone of my bones
And flesh of my flesh;
She shall be called Woman,
Because she was taken out of Man.”**

Mark my words...

Adam, the first human being...the direct descendent of The Lord God; and in truth, every man and woman's earthly father; called the first female: “woman.”

In other words...

Adam did not call women: “princesses,” “bitches,” “whores,” “that,” or “babes” ...these speak more about attitude [and a bad or negative one at that] than existence.

Eve did not call women: “princesses,” “divas,” “goddesses,” “queens,” “stars,” or “baby girls”...these speak more about attitude [and a bad or negative one at that] than existence.

CHAPTER: Women

VERSION: Jesus: “Woman”

†

“I AM GOD...”

John 19:26

Behold Your Mother

²⁵Now there stood by the cross of Jesus His mother, and His mother’s sister, Mary the wife of Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. ²⁶When Jesus therefore saw His mother, and the disciple whom He loved standing by, He said to His mother, “Woman, behold your son!” ²⁷Then He said to the disciple, “Behold your mother!” And from that hour that disciple took her to his own home.

Mark my words...

As God, there on the cross, Jesus knows [when we were created and when we die] we will only have a father—no mother. Just as humans are born of women—sin came through our birth and woman.

CHAPTER: *Women*

VERSION: *Women in Church*



**“I AM GOD...
TRUST ME. FOLLOW MY MASTER PLAN
AND MAN; WOMAN AND CHILD WILL BE BLESSED.”**

1 Corinthians 14:34-40

³⁴Let your women keep silent in the churches, for they are not permitted to speak; but they are to be submissive, as the law also says. ³⁵And if they want to learn something, let them ask their own husbands at home; for it is shameful for women to speak in church.

³⁶Or did the word of God come originally from you? Or was it you only that it reached? ³⁷If anyone thinks himself to be a prophet or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things which I write to you are the commandments of the Lord. ³⁸But if anyone is ignorant, let him be ignorant.

³⁹Therefore, brethren, desire earnestly to prophesy, and do not forbid to speak with tongues. ⁴⁰Let all things be done decently and in order.

1 Timothy 2:8-15

Men and Women in the Church

⁸I desire therefore that the men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting; ⁹in like manner also, that the women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with propriety and moderation, not with braided hair or gold or pearls or costly clothing, ¹⁰but, which is proper for women professing godliness, with good works. ¹¹Let a woman learn in silence with all submission. ¹²And I do not permit a woman to teach or to have authority over a man, but to be in silence. ¹³For Adam was formed first, then Eve. ¹⁴And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, fell into transgression. ¹⁵Nevertheless she will be saved in

childbearing if they continue in faith, love, and holiness, with self-control.

1 Timothy 3:1-13

Qualifications of Overseers

Qualifications of Church Officers

¹This is a faithful saying: If a man desires the position of a bishop, he desires a good work. ²A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, temperate, sober-minded, of good behavior, hospitable, able to teach; ³not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for money, but gentle, not quarrelsome, not covetous; ⁴one who rules his own house well, having his children in submission with all reverence ⁵(for if a man does not know how to rule his own house, how will he take care of the church of God?); ⁶not a novice, lest being puffed up with pride he fall into the same condemnation as the devil. ⁷Moreover he must have a good testimony among those who are outside, lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

Qualifications of Deacons

⁸Likewise deacons must be reverent, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy for money, ⁹holding the mystery of the faith with a pure conscience. ¹⁰But let these also first be tested; then let them serve as deacons, being found blameless. ¹¹Likewise, their wives must be reverent, not slanderers, temperate, faithful in all things. ¹²Let deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well. ¹³For those who have served well as deacons obtain for themselves a good standing and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

1 Peter 3:1-6

Submission to Husbands

Serving and Suffering for God's Glory

¹Wives, likewise, be submissive to your own husbands, that even if some do not obey the word, they, without a word, may be won by the conduct of their wives, ²when they observe your chaste conduct accompanied by fear. ³Do not let your adornment be merely outward—arranging the hair, wearing gold, or putting on fine apparel—⁴rather let it be the hidden person of the heart, with the incorruptible beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in the sight of God. ⁵For in this manner, in former times, the holy women who trusted in God also adorned themselves, being submissive to their own husbands, ⁶as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters you are if you do good and are not afraid with any terror.

Mark my words...

Any man that allows a woman to lead him in instruction in the Word of God or works beneath the feet of a woman in the ministry, is disobedient before The Lord. In God's wisdom, He knows female preachers, teachers, or ministers would better serve Him by working or serving in a different way in the church. More importantly, women would serve in obedience by being a wife to a man of God. And best yet; women would serve The Lord God best, and in full obedience, by giving birth to a man of God.

In other words...

Think of the greatest women in the Bible: Eve, "the mother of all"; and the Mother of Jesus, Mary; and they, and for fact, no woman ever preached in the Bible.

My last words...

On this day and time: this message is for you Joyce; Marilyn; and most disobedient, Paula. You are all mocking God.

CHAPTER: Women

VERSION: Women in the Bible



**“I AM GOD...
IN THE LIFE OF MANKIND, A WOMAN’S PLACE IS A LIFE-
SAVING ONE—
BUT WHEN A WOMAN IS OUT OF PLACE, IT CAN BE A
LIFE-THREATENING ONE.”**

Mark my words...

The role of women in the church may be unveiled in context by noting a few simple facts, points, and examples. First of all, today in “the church,” especially Catholic and Anglican churches; women seem to play a major role in the church life. Yet, to begin; the writers only included 2 books of 66 [Esther and Ruth] in the Protestant Bible; and 3 books of 73 [Judith, Esther, and Ruth] in the Catholic Bible which centered on women.

Secondly, read to see the roles these renowned women and children of God played: Ruth was the wife of Boaz. Ruth was a blessed woman, but her role was as the wife of this man of God. Judith was a daughter and widow to Manasseh. Just as Judith is a daughter of God the Father, she was a wife to a man of God. And Esther was the niece and adopted daughter of Mordecai. Later, she became Queen, appointed by the King after reviewing many virgins. She was leader of the females. She worked for the King taking orders from him.

In other words...

Look at their “positions”; you do not read about women being priests or preachers. And you would think: if God wanted women to be such, He would have at least placed one in that position or had one written of who acted as such during the ages documented in Scripture.

God gave everything to man: Adam. And it was lost when Adam listened to woman: Eve. So too, while Eve does mean “the mother of all” it does not mean the priest, priestess, God or goddess, or Savior of all. As a mother or a child of God, a woman has a specified place in the

church, and it is not at the altar. And in the life of mankind, a woman's place is a lifesaving one—but when a woman is out of place; it can be a life-threatening one.

CHAPTER: Women

VERSION: Women Who Serve In Church



“I AM GOD...”

Romans 16:1-2

Sister Phoebe Commended

Final Commendations and Greetings

¹I commend to you Phoebe our sister, who is a servant of the church in Cenchrea, ²that you may receive her in the Lord in a manner worthy of the saints, and assist her in whatever business she has need of you; for indeed she has been a helper of many and of myself also.

Romans 16: 3-4

Greeting Roman Saints

³Greet Priscilla and Aquila, my fellow workers in Christ Jesus, ⁴who risked their own necks for my life, to whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles.

Romans 16:12-16

¹²Greet Tryphena and Tryphosa, who have labored in the Lord. Greet the beloved Persis, who labored much in the Lord. ¹³Greet Rufus, chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine. ¹⁴Greet Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren who are with them. ¹⁵Greet Philologus and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints who are with them.

¹⁶Greet one another with a holy kiss. The churches of Christ greet you.

Mark my words...

Paul regarded many women as having a meaningful place in ministry and church work; but there are defined roles for man and woman, and they are not the same. The male is the leader, and the female is a supporter. Just as Jesus Himself would, here in Holy Scripture, Paul gives praise to those who work with and support the church and the spread of the Gospel. To that end, there is teamwork, unity, and effectiveness when men and women follow God's divine plan.

In other words...

This is not my plan, or Paul's, or a man's [if you are a male]; or yours [if you are a female] but the plan of God, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit.

CHAPTER: *Women*
VERSION: *The Catholic Church*



**“I AM GOD...
ONE OF THE MOST SINFUL AND DANGEROUS
PERVERSIONS IN THE CATHOLIC CHURCH, IS THE
DEIFICATION OR WORSHIP SHOWN TO THE MOTHER OF
JESUS, MY CHILD MARY. A DIRECT DESCENDENT OR
MANIFESTATION OF THIS PRACTICE, IS THE AUTHORITY
TAKEN BY WOMEN AND FORFEITED BY MEN.
COUPLED WITH THE MAN’S APATHY AND UNWISDOM,
AND WOMAN’S WEAKNESS AND MISCARRIAGE OF HER
PLACE—
THE CHURCH AND ITS CHILDREN WILL SUFFER.”**

Mark my words...

This truth from God applies to each and every Christian church that does not directly follow the Word of God.

In other words...

*While this truth had come to me from God years earlier, a profound lesson on this comes “on the heels” (Genesis 3:15) of another sinful and negative experience I have encountered in a church with a strong “female presence.” Note: Please read CHAPTER: *Stories*, VERSION: *Joy to the World*.*

CHAPTER: Words
VERSION: Making “Love”

†

**“I AM GOD...
MAKING ‘LOVE’ IS NOT LOVE.”**

Proverbs 8:7-9

**⁷For my mouth will speak truth;
Wickedness is an abomination to my lips.
⁸All the words of my mouth are with righteousness;
Nothing crooked or perverse is in them.
⁹They are all plain to him who understands,
And right to those who find knowledge.**

Mark my words...

“Making love”...No expression could be farther from the truth.

In other words...

Sex is sex—and the only love involved in “sex”; should be the love of the life that is created when creation follows the command of God to be “fruitful and multiply.”

Note: Please read CHAPTER: Sex / VERSION: Sex—Sex—Sex

CHAPTER: *Work*

VERSION: *God's Perfect Work Ethic—The Way to Work*

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

“Burn yourself out” on your work or your projects; work completely, as if you would die—then rest and recover and rise again—just as Jesus did. Jesus worked, to the end, and died—He “rested” for 3 days—and then rose again to continue His work today.

CHAPTER: *Work*

VERSION: *God's Perfect Work Ethic—Sunrise-to-Sunset: God's Perfect 6-Day Work Ethic*



**“I AM GOD...
THE CULTURE THAT DOES NOT
ADHERE TO MY PERFECT WORK ETHIC
IS OPERATING AN EVIL ECONOMIC EMPIRE.”**

Genesis 1:31

³¹Then God saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good. So the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

Genesis 2:1-2

The Garden of Eden

¹Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished.

²And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had done, and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had done.

Mark my words...

God created the world in 6 days. For human beings, that should equate to rising and working the entire day. If, in the course of the year, you work 313 days and you get 52 days “off”—it is a guarantee that at the end of the year you will have the greatest productivity humanly possible. You will have achieved a level of success second-to-none; plus, you will have greater strength to resist temptation and against living unproductively. Working a 40-hour work week with added vacation days are not in God's perfect work ethic.

In other words...

In America, the United States is not actually the wealthiest nation on the face of the earth. Basically, because America's financial debt is the largest among all nations. In part, the work ethic in America is very imperfect. In addition, most of its “wealth” has been derived by sinful,

evil ways and means, rather than godly and more spiritually correct ways. Sinful behavior like deceit, theft, greed, manipulation and slavery are the types of tactics and characteristics that can deceptively and corruptibly seemingly expand a nation's economy. But this is a nation and a people that are generally void of God's pattern of success and perfect work ethic.

My last words...

The culture or country that does not adhere to the sunrise-to-sunset, six-day work ethic operates an evil economic empire.



“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

During the course of the writing of this book, I was traveling down the “information superhighway,” as they say, in search of information pertaining to certain men of God. When I entered their names in a “search engine” [a software program that searches a database and gathers and reports information that contains or is related to specified terms]; basically, a listing based on the popularity of the searches according to the men’s names—I would think that God would want these men’s names to appear on top of the list. However, from the Internet world’s viewpoint, these were the entries, results and names that appeared [Note: each name listed appears above and before the name of the person in question].

In other words...

Also note the professions or fields of infamy that the Internet world finds popular or of greater interest than the lives of the men of ministry: entertainment, business, government, sports. For a God who created the world and man by His spoken Word—it’s of great interest to see what or who “makes the world go around” for most people.

Billy [Rev. Billy Graham]

1. Billy Bear—*Entertainment*

Charles [Dr. Charles Stanley]

1. Charles Schwab—*Business*

Ray Charles—*Entertainment*

Charlie Brown—*Entertainment*

Charles Dickens—*Entertainment*

Martin [Dr. Martin Luther King]

- 1. CF Martin—*Business*
- Lockheed Martin—*Business*

John [John the Baptist or the Gospel of John or Pope John Paul]

- 1. John Kerry—*Government*
- John Mayer—*Entertainment*
- John Edwards—*Government*
- Elton John—*Entertainment*
- John Hancock—*Business*
- John Fitzgerald Kennedy—*Government*
- Papa John's—*Business*
- John Lennon—*Entertainment*
- John Philip Souza—*Entertainment*
- John Mellencamp—*Entertainment*
- John Malkovich—*Entertainment*
- John Grisham—*Entertainment*
- John Adams—*Government*
- John Milton—*Entertainment*
- John Daly—*Sports*

My last words...

...And I still have not located John the Baptist, or John Paul, the Pope.

CHAPTER: X=Symbol for Christ(ians)

VERSION: Symbolic Christians

†

**“I AM GOD...
I CAN TELL THE STATUS OF THE WORLD
BY THE NUMBER OF CHRISTIANS IN IT.
CHRISTIANITY IS THE ONE TRUE RELIGION: THE GOOD.”**

Mark my words...

The false religion: the evil—will rule to take over the world because of the one act that they commit that [true] Christians do not and that Christ said His true disciples or followers shouldn't or won't—and that act is killing in a time of war [or at any time].

In fact, Jesus said all Christian's will be persecuted. The truth of the matter is: an evil religion will persecute false “Christians” and all Christians in times of war, just as false “Christians” will persecute true Christians.

CHAPTER: X=Symbol for Christ(ians)

VERSION: The True Christian



“I AM GOD... NARROW IS THE GATE.”

Luke 13:22-33

The Narrow Way

²²And He went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem. ²³Then one said to Him, “Lord, are there few who are saved?”

And He said to them, ²⁴“Strive to enter through the narrow gate, for many, I say to you, will seek to enter and will not be able. ²⁵When once the Master of the house has risen up and shut the door, and you begin to stand outside and knock at the door, saying, “Lord, Lord, open for us,’ and He will answer and say to you, “I do not know you, where you are from,’ ²⁶then you will begin to say, “We ate and drank in Your presence, and You taught in our streets.’ ²⁷But He will say, “I tell you I do not know you, where you are from. Depart from Me, all you workers of iniquity.’ ²⁸There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when you see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, and yourselves thrust out. ²⁹They will come from the east and the west, from the north and the south, and sit down in the kingdom of God. ³⁰And indeed there are last who will be first, and there are first who will be last.”

³¹On that very day some Pharisees came, saying to Him, “Get out and depart from here, for Herod wants to kill You.”

³²And He said to them, “Go, tell that fox, “Behold, I cast out demons and perform cures today and tomorrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.’ ³³Nevertheless I must journey today, tomorrow, and the day following; for it cannot be that a prophet should perish outside of Jerusalem.

Mark my words...

The Bible records Jesus saying: "...in that day you will say 'Lord, Lord'..." This is Jesus speaking about the day when He returns—because true Christians will be the "elect" who chose to "lose their life" because "false Christians" will die and they will be denied.

CHAPTER: Zechariah
VERSION: Co-dependency

†

“I AM GOD...”

Mark my words...

Zechariah is the father of John the Baptist. John the Baptist is my Biblical hero. In my early life, my father was my hero. Like Zechariah and his son John, my father was never dependent on anyone but God and himself. For many years, Zechariah and his wife, Elizabeth, could have no children. One day, the angel Gabriel announced to Zechariah he would have a son.

For many years, my own father and my saintly mother raised eight children, of which I was the firstborn. Unbeknownst and unexpected to me, my mother died. For years, I was lost and suicidal with no one to depend on. Eventually, I had no earthly choice but to depend on Jesus to be the love of my life. However, I still remained unhealthily dependent on a multitude of female loves to fill the void created by the loss of my mother.

On the other hand, my father, like I, forfeited portions of his independence, financial blessings, and spirituality for an unhealthy co-dependence on a new wife for his own. Truth be told; a co-dependent male and an equally co-dependent female cannot marry into a relationship unless dependent solely on Christ. The following document was an appeal to him, drafted and presented with the intention of setting him free from dependence.

In other words...

THE PROPERTY...

Matthew 12:25

Jesus knew their thoughts and said to them, “Every kingdom divided against itself will be ruined, and every city or household divided against itself will not stand.

Mark 3:25

If a house is divided against itself, that house cannot stand.

THE POSSESSIONS...

Luke 12:13-15

The Parable of the Rich Fool

¹³Someone in the crowd said to him, “Teacher, tell my brother to divide the inheritance with me.”

¹⁴Jesus replied, “Man, who appointed me a judge or an arbiter between you?” ¹⁵Then he said to them, “Watch out! Be on your guard against all kinds of greed; a man’s life does not consist in the abundance of his possessions.”

THE PLAYERS...

Deuteronomy 21:15-17

Rights Of A First-Born Son

Moses said to Israel:

¹⁵⁻¹⁷Suppose a man has two wives and loves one more than the other. The first son of either wife is the man’s first-born son, even if the boy’s mother is the wife the man doesn’t love. Later, when the man is near death and is dividing up his property, he must give a double share to his first-born son, simply because he was the first to be born.

THE PERPETRAITOR...

Matthew 5:31-32

Marriage Is Sacred and Binding

³¹“Furthermore it has been said, “Whoever divorces his wife, let him give her a certificate of divorce.’ ³²But I say to you that whoever divorces his wife for any reason except sexual immorality causes her to commit adultery; and whoever marries a woman who is divorced commits adultery.

THE PRICE TO PAY...

Romans 13:8

Love

⁸Let love be your only debt! If you love others, you have done all that the Law demands.

THE PLAN...

Micah 2:1-11

Punishment for Those Who Abuse Their Power

¹Doomed! You’re doomed! At night you lie in bed, making evil plans. And when morning comes, you do what you’ve planned because you have the power. ²You grab any field or house that you want; you cheat families out of homes and land. ³But here is what the LORD says: “I am planning trouble for you. Your necks will be caught in a noose, and you will be disgraced in this time of disaster.” ⁴When that happens, this sorrowful song will be sung about you: “Ruined! Completely ruined! The LORD has taken our land and given it to traitors.” ⁵And so you will never again own property among the LORD’s people. ⁶“Enough of your preaching!” That’s what you tell me. “We won’t be disgraced, so stop preaching!” ⁷Descendants of Jacob, is it right for you to claim that the LORD did what he did because he was angry? Doesn’t he always bless those who do right? ⁸My people, you have even stolen clothes right off

the backs of your unsuspecting soldiers returning home from battle.
⁹You take over lovely homes that belong to the women of my nation.
Then you cheat their children out of the inheritance that comes from the LORD. ¹⁰Get out of here, you crooks! You'll find no rest here. You're not fit to belong to the LORD's people, and you will be destroyed. ¹¹The only prophet you want is a liar who will say, "Drink and get drunk!"

THE PRISONER...

Matthew 5:25

Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are on the way with him, lest your adversary deliver you to the judge, the judge hand you over to the officer, and you be thrown into prison.

THE PAYOFF...

Numbers 33:53-55

⁵³you shall dispossess the inhabitants of the land and dwell in it, for I have given you the land to possess. ⁵⁴And you shall divide the land by lot as an inheritance among your families; to the larger you shall give a larger inheritance, and to the smaller you shall give a smaller inheritance; there everyone's inheritance shall be whatever falls to him by lot. You shall inherit according to the tribes of your fathers. ⁵⁵But if you do not drive out the inhabitants of the land from before you, then it shall be that those whom you let remain shall be irritants in your eyes and thorns in your sides, and they shall harass you in the land where you dwell.

Jesus loves you and died for you...and so would I. If this writing means losing communication and sharing of my life with you on this earth, in the fleeting time that remains—then so be it. I will choose to honor my Father above and my father below.

Happy Anniversary of the day of your birth, I love you, your #1 son,

The Writer

TITLE: I AM GOD

CASES—*Holy Spirit-Filled v. Satanic Disagreements*

†

“I AM GOD...”

The Case of Holy Spirit-filled v. Satanic Disagreements

When two people [or more] debate or discuss a point—how can you know which person’s perspective is that of the Holy Spirit?

Which person is telling the truth? Which person says the good thing? Which person is right? How do you tell?

Mark my words...

- A. *The first person [person #1] speaks → person #2 listens*
- B. *The first person [person #1] speaks → person #2 listens*
- C. *The second person [person #2] speaks → person #1 listens*
- D. *The second person [person #2] speaks → person #1 listens*

In situation A: if person #1 says [right things] and person #2 is offended, ungodly angry, or mean—then person #1 speaks in the Holy Spirit.

In situation B: if person #1 says [wrong things] and person #2 is offended, ungodly angry, or mean—then neither person speaks in the Holy Spirit.

In situation C: if person 2 says [wrong things] and person #1 listens peacefully, quietly, and thoughtfully—then person #1 is in the Holy Spirit.

In situation D: if the person #2 says [right things] and person #1 listens peacefully, quietly, and thoughtfully—then both persons are in the Holy Spirit.

The key is: The person who is righteous and truthful; and is in peace, quietness, and meditation—is in the Holy Spirit. Speaking and listening with feelings of being offended, ungodly angry, or negative in any way—that is not the way of the Holy Spirit.

When Jesus spoke, He “offended,” “upset,” and had many [sinners] turn on Him. As well, when these sinners spoke [wrongly] to Jesus—did He get “offended,” “angry,” or “mean?” No! Jesus listened, loved, and “turned the other cheek.” The moral of the story is: the Holy Spirit is a spirit of peace and love. Jesus said, “My peace I leave you...” Think of it this way: Jesus isn’t saying my [kind of] peace, He’s saying “my” [as in the owner and Creator] of peace...the only peace—the Prince of Peace.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CASES—*Life v. Death*

†

“I AM GOD...”

The Case of Bush & Hussein v. God the Father, God the Son,
and the evil state of death God the Holy Spirit, and the good state of life

Mark my words...

“In the beginning...” God’s first characteristic and act, God’s first and foremost expression of Himself and His nature was to be a creator: The Creator [“In the beginning...God created... the Heavens and the earth”].

The first truth is: God is a Creator. God created man and woman—life on the earth—and God loves this life enough that: “He created them in His own image.” God then instructed and told man: “Thou shalt not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil or surely you will die.” Later, two Commandments were given testifying to this: the Second Command was “...love man as yourself.”

Basically, Satan tempted man with the choice to live or to die. And man, man chose by his disobedience: death. Therefore, for man, there is only one conclusive decision: good or evil, and life or death. Life is good. And death is evil. One person kills and one person dies... case closed.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—1 Samuel 15:22—Obedience before Sacrifice

†

**“I AM GOD...
TO OBEY IS BETTER THAN SACRIFICE.”**

1 Samuel 15:22

²²But Samuel replied:

**“Does the LORD delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices
as much as in obeying the voice of the LORD?
To obey is better than sacrifice, and to heed is better than the fat of
rams.**

Mark my words...

God knows we need to be obedient first [just as the disciples did in following Jesus] then He will allow us to be sacrificed [to give of ourselves sacrificially—just as the disciples were all crucified or martyred].

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—Matthew 5:43-48—The Sun (Son) Rises

†

“I AM GOD...”

Matt. 5:43-48

Love for Enemies

⁴³“You have heard that it was said, ‘Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ ⁴⁴But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, ⁴⁵that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. ⁴⁶If you love those who love you, what reward will you get? Are not even the tax collectors doing that? ⁴⁷And if you greet only your brothers, what are you doing more than others? Do not even pagans do that? ⁴⁸Be perfect, therefore, as your heavenly Father is perfect.

Mark my words...

Islam, Christian, all peoples...Jesus rose to resurrect all people!

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—Mark 6:1-6



**“I AM GOD...
NOW HE COULD DO NO MIGHTY WORK THERE,
EXCEPT THAT HE LAID HIS HANDS ON A FEW SICK
PEOPLE AND HEALED THEM.”**

Mark 6:1-6

A Prophet without Honor

¹Jesus left there and went to his hometown, accompanied by his disciples. ²When the Sabbath came, he began to teach in the synagogue, and many who heard him were amazed.

³“Where did this man get these things?” they asked. “What’s this wisdom that has been given him, that he even does miracles! Isn’t this the carpenter? Isn’t this Mary’s son and the brother of James, Joseph, Judas and Simon? Aren’t his sisters here with us?” And they took offense at him.

⁴Jesus said to them, “Only in his hometown, among his relatives and in his own house is a prophet without honor.” ⁵He could not do any miracles there, except lay his hands on a few sick people and heal them.

⁶And he was amazed at their lack of faith.

Mark my words...

Jesus could do no miracles there. This was because of the people’s lack of faith. They did not believe enough in God. Most importantly, supernaturally, and from Jesus’ point-of-view; it was not that they did not believe in God—they could not supernaturally and subconsciously, and in their believing heart; see or know that the man they did not believe, Jesus, was God! They did not think the power and work that God does—can be done in and by a man—or else God and Jesus could never have been one-in-the-same.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—Luke 9:26



**“I AM GOD...
IF ANYONE IS ASHAMED OF ME AND MY WORDS....”**

Luke 9:26

²⁶If anyone is ashamed of me and my words, the Son of Man will be ashamed of him when he comes in his glory and in the glory of the Father and of the holy angels.

Mark my words...

Jesus is not only telling the Christian believer to confess God before others. And He is not, as our mind first believes, condemning us if we do not admit to knowing Him as in shame.

In other words...

What Jesus also says, in particular to the un-saved, non-believer is: we must know and admit who He is for us to be saved, period. Jesus, in His way, is saying, even admitting; that He and the Father are one.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—John 2:21-29



“I AM GOD...”

1 John 2:1-29

The Test of Knowing Christ

¹My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. ²And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.

1 John 2:2—“...our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.” Jesus died for Christians and non-Christians—all the people of the world.

The Test of Knowing Him

³Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments.

1 John 2:3—We know Him by keeping His Commandments. Remember the two New Testament ones He gave. If you don’t keep them, you are a...

⁴He who says, “I know Him,” and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

1 John 2:4—...liar...again, follower of Satan or antichrist. “I know Him” is not enough. Being a Christian, in other words, is not enough: “the truth is not in him.”

⁵But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him.

1 John 2:5—perfected...again, plus word, love and [truth] truly.

⁶He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked.

1 John 2:6—walk or live as He walked and lived—or die like He died. Live without killing.

⁷Brethren, I write no new commandment to you, but an old commandment which you have had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which you heard from the beginning. ⁸Again, a new commandment I write to you, which thing is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away, and the true light is already shining. ⁹He who says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness until now.

1 John 2:9—hate leads to killing; that is darkness and evil.

¹⁰He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. ¹¹But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes.

1 John 2:11—“darkness has blinded his eyes.” Just like we read how Satan works to blind us.

Their Spiritual State

¹²I write to you, little children,

Because your sins are forgiven you for His name's sake.

¹³I write to you, fathers,

Because you have known Him who is from the beginning.

I write to you, young men,

Because you have overcome the wicked one.

I write to you, little children,

Because you have known the Father.

¹⁴I have written to you, fathers,

Because you have known Him who is from the beginning.

I have written to you, young men,

Because you are strong, and the word of God abides in you, And you have overcome the wicked one.

Do Not Love the World

¹⁵Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. ¹⁶For all that is in the world—the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life—is not of the Father but is of the world. ¹⁷And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the will of God abides forever.

Deceptions of the Last Hour

¹⁸Little children, it is the last hour; and as you have heard that the Antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have come, by which we know that it is the last hour. ¹⁹They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us; but they went out that they might be made manifest, that none of them were of us.

1 John 2:19—This verse coincides with 6:66...The spirit of antichrist. “They went from us”: Christians, former disciples, all who oppose Jesus Christ’s teachings on life. Strongly, John almost disowns them writing: “Their desertion shows that none of them was our number.” Note the secondary reference to number.

²⁰But you have an anointing from the Holy One, and you know all things. ²¹I have not written to you because you do not know the truth, but because you know it, and that no lie is of the truth. ²²Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist who denies the Father and the Son. ²³Whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either; he who acknowledges the Son has the Father also.

1 John 2:22—John doesn’t mean the Antichrist, as in one person, he means anyone who disbelieves Jesus is the Anointed One. This person is an antichrist.

Let Truth Abide In You

²⁴Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in the Son and in the Father. ²⁵And this is the promise that He has promised us—eternal life.

²⁶These things I have written to you concerning those who try to deceive

you.²⁷ But the anointing which you have received from Him abides in you, and you do not need that anyone teach you; but as the same anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you will abide in Him.

The Children of God

²⁸ And now, little children, abide in Him, that when He appears, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming. ²⁹ If you know that He is righteous, you know that everyone who practices righteousness is born of Him.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—John 6:22-71



“I AM GOD...”

John 6:22-71

The Bread from Heaven

²²On the following day, when the people who were standing on the other side of the sea saw that there was no other boat there, except that one which His disciples had entered, and that Jesus had not entered the boat with His disciples, but His disciples had gone away alone—

²³however, other boats came from Tiberias, near the place where they ate bread after the Lord had given thanks—²⁴when the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, nor His disciples, they also got into boats and came to Capernaum, seeking Jesus. ²⁵And when they found Him on the other side of the sea, they said to Him, “Rabbi, when did You come here?”

²⁶Jesus answered them and said, “Most assuredly, I say to you, you seek Me, not because you saw the signs, but because you ate of the loaves and were filled. ²⁷Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life, which the Son of Man will give you, because God the Father has set His seal on Him.”

Mark my words...

6:27—“seal.” John recorded Jesus speaking “seal”—and in the end, in the book of Revelation, it is given to John to see the seals. John knows the meaning of life to the Father.

²⁸Then they said to Him, “What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?”

²⁹Jesus answered and said to them, “This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.”

³⁰Therefore they said to Him, “What sign will You perform then, that we may see it and believe You? What work will You do? ³¹Our fathers ate the manna in the desert; as it is written, “He gave them bread from heaven to eat.”

³²Then Jesus said to them, “Most assuredly, I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven. ³³For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.”

6:33—“...gives life to the world, the bread that comes down from Heaven.” And Jesus said His body was the bread, and He is all we need, not only in an earthly sense, but in an eternally, all encompassing way. Not about the necessities, both moral and physical—but life, human life, soul life—*itself*.

³⁴Then they said to Him, “Lord, give us this bread always.”

³⁵And Jesus said to them, “I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst.

6:35—He says, “I am the bread of life.” Again, see the importance Jesus puts on the body. The body, the human body, is a living life.

³⁶But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe. ³⁷All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out. ³⁸For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me. ³⁹This is the will of the Father who sent Me, that of all He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day.

6:39—“lose nothing”—*nothing is the power of life, the victory of life over death.*

⁴⁰And this is the will of Him who sent Me, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day.”

6:40—“...sees the Son and believes in Him.” Seeing the Son is not the only part but believing in Him. Jesus said: “People will say, ‘Lord, Lord,’” meaning they are seeing Him and not getting in. It’s the belief, and belief in all His teachings, especially on the value of life; that makes us one with Him and the Father and gives us eternal life.

Rejected By His Own

⁴¹The Jews then complained about Him, because He said, “I am the bread which came down from heaven.” ⁴²And they said, “Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that He says, “I have come down from heaven?”

⁴³Jesus therefore answered and said to them, “Do not murmur among yourselves. ⁴⁴No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; and I will raise him up at the last day. ⁴⁵It is written in the prophets, “And they shall all be taught by God.’ Therefore everyone who has heard and learned from the Father comes to Me. ⁴⁶Not that anyone has seen the Father, except He who is from God; He has seen the Father. ⁴⁷Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me has everlasting life. ⁴⁸I am the bread of life. ⁴⁹Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

⁵⁰This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that one may eat of it and not die.

6:50—“...may eat of it and not die.” The Jews who don’t believe in Jesus will die, eternally. By the Old Testament you die; by the Old Testament with the New Testament [Jesus] and you don’t die.

⁵¹I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world.”

6:51—Jesus says, clearly, “the bread is the flesh”...His body is the bread—the body is a human life. “...For the life of the world”; this is an amazing and meaningful statement covering both life on earth and eternally—simultaneously.

⁵²The Jews therefore quarreled among themselves, saying, “How can this Man give us His flesh to eat?”

⁵³Then Jesus said to them, “Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you.

⁵⁴Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. ⁵⁵For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. ⁵⁶He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. ⁵⁷As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who feeds on Me will live because of Me. ⁵⁸This is the bread which came down from heaven—not as your fathers ate the manna, and

are dead. He who eats this bread will live forever.”

⁵⁹These things He said in the synagogue as He taught in Capernaum.

Many Disciples Turn Away

⁶⁰Therefore many of His disciples, when they heard this, said, “This is a hard saying; who can understand it?”

⁶¹When Jesus knew in Himself that His disciples complained about this, He said to them, “Does this offend you? ⁶²What then if you should see the Son of Man ascend where He was before? ⁶³It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life.

6:63—“...the Spirit gives life; the flesh is of no avail.” To murder and kill one another, to battle in the flesh is of no avail. It accomplished absolutely nothing: not peace, justice, or righteousness. The words and Jesus’ spoken beliefs are spirit and life. Listen to Him and we will live.

⁶⁴But there are some of you who do not believe.” For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were who did not believe, and who would betray Him.

6:64 {antichrist spirit stage 1 }—The “... some who don’t believe”; that is the spirit of antichrist. They may have been disciples—they may even remain “Christians,” but they are not fully in the truth, believing Jesus and in Him. John mentions Judas.

⁶⁵And He said, “Therefore I have said to you that no one can come to Me unless it has been granted to him by My Father.”

6:65 {antichrist spirit stage 2 }—This is what divides and separates Jesus’ meaning and giving of life versus those [even “Christians”] who take life.

⁶⁶From that time many of His disciples went back and walked with Him no more.

6:66 {antichrist spirit stage 3—This may be the number John spoke of: the infamous number of “the Beast.” }—Many of His disciples “walked with Him no more.” These are Christians, and non-Christians, but profoundly Christians, who will return to deceptively believing that murder, any murder, is acceptable. The clue from John is in: “walked with Him no more [or “former way

of life,” in some translations]. The “walking no more” is believing in “God-ordained” [that is found in the Old Testament], or any murder.

⁶⁷Then Jesus said to the twelve, “Do you also want to go away?”

⁶⁸But Simon Peter answered Him, “Lord, to whom shall we go? You have the words of eternal life. ⁶⁹Also we have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.”

6:69—“The Son of the living God.” I believe the most profound name by which a disciple can call Him: “...of...God”; also meaning one [from] and one [with] God.

⁷⁰Jesus answered them, “Did I not choose you, the twelve, and one of you is a devil?”

6:70—Jesus said, He chose you, the twelve, yet one of you is a devil. Jesus only used this term in a dissimilar way, when He spoke about Peter, who is the very person conversing in this Scripture. Jesus said: “...a devil...not, the devil; but a devil—Jesus knows this is the spirit of antichrist. More so, Jesus knows, that while He can save and teach the disciples; again, as mentioned in verse 65, that The Father is working on the “big picture” of the spiritual wars, above the flesh, and the outcome of the world; both in Jesus’ day, the last day, and eternity that is going on. He also said this to keep in accordance with the Scriptures; knowing that He always follows the will of the Father and fulfills what is written in Scripture.

⁷¹He spoke of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon, for it was he who would betray Him, being one of the twelve.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—Acts 5:1-11



**“I AM GOD...
DON’T EXPLOIT HIM—WORK WITH HIM.”**

Acts 5:1-11

Lying to the Holy Spirit

¹But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession. ²And he kept back part of the proceeds, his wife also being aware of it, and brought a certain part and laid it at the apostles’ feet. ³But Peter said, “Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit and keep back part of the price of the land for yourself? ⁴While it remained, was it not your own? And after it was sold, was it not in your own control? Why have you conceived this thing in your heart? You have not lied to men but to God.” ⁵Then Ananias, hearing these words, fell down and breathed his last. So great fear came upon all those who heard these things. ⁶And the young men arose and wrapped him up, carried him out, and buried him. ⁷Now it was about three hours later when his wife came in, not knowing what had happened. ⁸And Peter answered her, “Tell me whether you sold the land for so much?” She said, “Yes, for so much.” ⁹Then Peter said to her, “How is it that you have agreed together to test the Spirit of the Lord? Look, the feet of those who have buried your husband are at the door, and they will carry you out.” ¹⁰Then immediately she fell down at his feet and breathed her last. And the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying her out, buried her by her husband. ¹¹So great fear came upon all the church and upon all who heard these things.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—Romans 1:1-32



“I AM GOD...”

Romans 1:1-17

Greeting

Paul's Ministry of the Gospel of Christ

¹Paul, a bondservant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle, separated to the gospel of God ²which He promised before through His prophets in the Holy Scriptures, ³concerning His Son Jesus Christ our Lord, who was born of the seed of David according to the flesh, ⁴and declared to be the Son of God with power according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead. ⁵Through Him we have received grace and apostleship for obedience to the faith among all nations for His name, ⁶among whom you also are the called of Jesus Christ; ⁷To all who are in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Desire to Visit Rome

⁸First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world. ⁹For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of His Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers, ¹⁰making request if, by some means, now at last I may find a way in the will of God to come to you. ¹¹For I long to see you, that I may impart to you some spiritual gift, so that you may be established—¹²that is, that I may be encouraged together with you by the mutual faith both of you and me. ¹³Now I do not want you to be unaware, brethren, that I often planned to come to you (but was hindered until now), that I might have some fruit among you also, just as among the other Gentiles. ¹⁴I am a debtor both to Greeks and to barbarians, both to wise and to unwise. ¹⁵So, as

much as is in me, I am ready to preach the gospel to you who are in Rome also.

The Just Live By Faith

¹⁶For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ, for it is the power of God to salvation for everyone who believes, for the Jew first and also for the Greek. ¹⁷For in it the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith; as it is written, “The just shall live by faith.”

1:16—“First the Jew, then for the Greek.” Jesus is the Messiah of the Jewish people. Often times, we may only think of Him as the leader, founder, or a teacher of Christianity. When God came to earth as a man, He came to save the lives of the Hebrew people. At the time, these were God’s chosen people. Even today, I see a deeper, sometimes more Spirited nature among the Messianic Jews and Jewish Christians; more than orthodox, traditional, denominational, or “born again” Christians. In part, these believers have a greater courage, in a sense, because their ancestors were the first peoples Jesus came to redeem, but the first peoples who rejected Him. For their salvation, they have more to overcome.

God’s Wrath on Unrighteousness

¹⁸For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness, ¹⁹because what may be known of God is manifest in them, for God has shown it to them. ²⁰For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse,

1:18-20—God is eternal power and divine nature. God works supernaturally and miraculously, but He also works simply in any and everything created and all of nature. And everywhere there is power or energy, things heavenly and things divine; there is God. And it is blasphemous and foolish to even say things like “mother nature” [it’s Father Nature], and to believe such things as evolution [it is creation]; in addition, to thinking some “higher power” or “divine energy” exists in and of itself or apart from its Master and Creator, The Lord God. There is no excuse or reason for even a spiritually limited human being to not believe in God. The devil never had the presence of the Holy Spirit to open his eyes; still he is not so blind as to see and not know God exists.

²¹because, although they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God, nor were thankful, but became futile in their thoughts, and their foolish hearts were darkened. ²²Professing to be wise, they became fools, ²³and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man—and birds and four-footed animals and creeping things.

1:21-22—At the time, man worshipped all sorts of idols and things, just as they would come to worship all sorts of false gods. The devil has an expansive imagination and limitless deception. Basically, it is breaking the 1st Commandment: No other Gods! Plus they, we, deified each other and ourselves, especially nowadays, because when a man believes there is no God—what he really believes is that he is God.

²⁴Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, in the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their bodies among themselves, ²⁵who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

1:24-25—God has given man the greatest power known to man in his humanness; freedom of choice. And if mankind so chooses, they may have immoral sex done by God-given free-will. And sinful humanity will naturally lean toward sinful human and bodily actions. And to have “...served created things” equates to how often does a male do this when worshipping the female creation in body; and when a female admires the male in physical form?

²⁶For this reason God gave them up to vile passions. For even their women exchanged the natural use for what is against nature. ²⁷Likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust for one another, men with men committing what is shameful, and receiving in themselves the penalty of their error which was due.

1:26-27—Human sexual immorality, which is still from free-will and free choice given from the Father—has now gotten worse...From the sexual love of the opposite sex; to the same sex; to “God knows” what else: bestiality? And there is no doubt a disease like AIDS, and all sexually-transmitted diseases; past, present and future—is one of “the due penalties for their perversion.”

²⁸And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind, to do those things which are not fitting; ²⁹being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil-mindedness; they are whisperers, ³⁰backbiters, haters of God, violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, ³¹undiscerning, untrustworthy, unloving, unforgiving, unmerciful;

³²who, knowing the righteous judgment of God, that those who practice such things are deserving of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them.

1:28-32—“My God!”—could man be any worse off than the traits mentioned here? At man’s core, the sins of the flesh, our body, ultimately lead to sins of our minds and hearts. For I have heard: “The body is just something that carries the head around.” And while our bodies will fall away and perish, our hearts, minds, souls and spirit are those that eventually matter. And in the sight of God, it will be these which will be presented before our Creator.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—2 Corinthians 12: 7-10



“I AM GOD...”

2 Corinthians 12: 7-10

The Thorn in the Flesh

⁷And lest I should be exalted above measure by the abundance of the revelations, a thorn in the flesh was given to me, a messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I be exalted above measure. ⁸Concerning this thing I pleaded with the Lord three times that it might depart from me. ⁹And He said to me, “My grace is sufficient for you, for My strength is made perfect in weakness.” Therefore most gladly I will rather boast in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. ¹⁰Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in needs, in persecutions, in distresses, for Christ’s sake. For when I am weak, then I am strong.

Mark my words...

The “thorn in the flesh” is nothing, no nothing other than sin. And no matter what form sin takes: lying, adultery, stealing...no matter, God can remove every single sin. However, every time He removes the thorn, the wound in the flesh remains. Remember: adultery, lying, stealing [etc.] is Satan’s thorn; remove one weakness and Satan brings a different one. The thorn in the flesh, therefore, is sin. And that is why it can’t be removed for any human. The thorn may change, but the wound [of sin] remains the same. Keep in mind; I am speaking about life on earth, not in eternity. In eternity, Jesus’ bloody wounds heal us all.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—Galatians 1:6

†

“I AM GOD...”

Galatians 1:6-10

Only One Gospel

⁶I marvel that you are turning away so soon from Him who called you in the grace of Christ, to a different gospel,⁷ which is not another; but there are some who trouble you and want to pervert the gospel of Christ.⁸ But even if we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than what we have preached to you, let him be accursed.⁹ As we have said before, so now I say again, if anyone preaches any other gospel to you than what you have received, let him be accursed.

¹⁰For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For if I still pleased men, I would not be a bondservant of Christ.

Mark my words...

Galatians 1:6—Paul is saying, I must let you know there are different meanings and messages that aren't being made truthfully known to you.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—James 5:16

†

**“I AM GOD...
THE MAN WHO IS RIGHT, LIVING CLEAN,
HE IS THE ONE WHO HAS MORE PRAYER POWER.”**

James 5:16

**¹⁶Confess your trespasses to one another, and pray for one another,
that you may be healed. The effective, fervent prayer of a righteous man
avails much.**

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—1 John Chapters 3, 4, and 5



**“I AM GOD...
THIS BOOK, THIS LETTER, IS JOHN’S STATEMENT:
HIS PRAYER TO THE END.
ALL OF CHAPTER THREE SHOULD BE APPLIED TO LIFE.”**

1 John 3:1-24

The Command To Love

¹Behold what manner of love the Father has bestowed on us, that we should be called children of God! Therefore the world does not know us, because it did not know Him. ²Beloved, now we are children of God; and it has not yet been revealed what we shall be, but we know that when He is revealed, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is. ³And everyone who has this hope in Him purifies himself, just as He is pure.

Sin and the Child of God

⁴Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness. ⁵And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins, and in Him there is no sin. ⁶Whoever abides in Him does not sin. Whoever sins has neither seen Him nor known Him. ⁷Little children, let no one deceive you. He who practices righteousness is righteous, just as He is righteous. ⁸He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. ⁹Whoever has been born of God does not sin, for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God.

The Imperative of Love

¹⁰In this the children of God and the children of the devil are manifest: Whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is he who does not love his brother.

Mark my words...

1 John 3:10—It is right to love his brother. Not in any of these readings does brother mean disciple, or child of God; but brother means all human beings, regardless of their sinful beliefs or actions.

¹¹For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another, ¹²not as Cain who was of the wicked one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his works were evil and his brother's righteous.

1 John 3:12—Again, John mentions murder—this time: the first murder. “Because his works were evil...” Cain belonged to the evil one and in Genesis, Moses writes that evil, sin, is a “demon lurking.”

¹³Do not marvel, my brethren, if the world hates you. ¹⁴We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love the brethren. He who does not love his brother abides in death.

1 John 3:14—John crosswords death, hate, and murder; with love and life.

¹⁵Whoever hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.

The Outworking Of Love

¹⁶By this we know love, because He laid down His life for us. And we also ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

1 John 3:16—He makes careful note of: “What would Jesus do?” He laid down His life, so we ought to do the same.

¹⁷But whoever has this world's goods, and sees his brother in need, and shuts up his heart from him, how does the love of God abide in him?

1 John 3:17—Who is in greater need than those who are being deceived and losing salvation?

¹⁸My little children, let us not love in word or in tongue, but in deed and in truth. ¹⁹And by this we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before Him. ²⁰For if our heart condemns us, God is greater than our heart, and knows all things. ²¹Beloved, if our heart does not condemn us, we have confidence toward God. ²²And whatever we ask we receive from Him, because we keep His commandments and do those things that are pleasing in His sight. ²³And this is His commandment: that we should believe on the name of His Son Jesus Christ and love one another, as He gave us commandment.

1 John 3:23—These words are the most powerful in one verse.

The Spirit of Truth and the Spirit of Error

²⁴Now he who keeps His commandments abides in Him, and He in him. And by this we know that He abides in us, by the Spirit whom He has given us.

1 John 3:24—Jesus spoke of this working of the Holy Spirit earlier.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—1 John 4:1-21



“I AM GOD...”

1 John 4:1-21

Love For God and One Another

¹Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world.

Mark my words...

1 John 4:1—John matches the false prophet as the one who will tell you it is okay to kill.

²By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God,

1 John 4:2—“...come in the flesh...” not only the Son of God, but the importance of the human body—the life of the human body. If you kill a body—where can the Holy Spirit reside? You take away the opportunity and destroy, in two ways [the gift of life itself] and the housing for the Holy Spirit.

³and every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God. And this is the spirit of the Antichrist, which you have heard was coming, and is now already in the world.

⁴You are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because He who is in you is greater than he who is in the world. ⁵They are of the world. Therefore they speak as of the world, and the world hears them.

⁶We are of God. He who knows God hears us; he who is not of God does not hear us. By this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of error.

Knowing God through Love

⁷Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God. ⁸He who does not love does not know God, for God is love. ⁹In this the love of God was manifested toward us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him. ¹⁰In this is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins. ¹¹Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another.

Seeing God through Love

¹²No one has seen God at any time. If we love one another, God abides in us, and His love has been perfected in us.

1 John 4:12—Love is perfection.

¹³By this we know that we abide in Him, and He in us, because He has given us of His Spirit.

1 John 4:13—Where is the Holy Spirit going to reside if we don't correct sinners?

¹⁴And we have seen and testify that the Father has sent the Son as Savior of the world.

1 John 4:14—We kill the work of Jesus, who came to save. Who can He save if we kill?

¹⁵Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him, and he in God. ¹⁶And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him.

The Consummation of Love

¹⁷Love has been perfected among us in this: that we may have boldness in the day of judgment; because as He is, so are we in this world.

1 John 4:17—John alludes to a day of judgment when we are in this world. On the last day, this is how we are to be.

¹⁸There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves torment. But he who fears has not been made perfect in love.

1 John 4:18—Fear of death. Fear of losing our life is what drives man to kill, especially in defense against another life. Jesus always talked about “losing our life here on earth.”

¹⁹We love Him because He first loved us.

Obedience by Faith

²⁰If someone says, “I love God,” and hates his brother, he is a liar; for he who does not love his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen? ²¹And this commandment we have from Him: that he who loves God must love his brother also.

TITLE: I AM GOD

CHAPTERS AND VERSES—1 John 5:1-21



“I AM GOD...”

1 John 5:1-21

Obedience by Faith

¹Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves Him who begot also loves him who is begotten of Him. ²By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep His commandments. ³For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome. ⁴For whatever is born of God overcomes the world. And this is the victory that has overcome the world—our faith. ⁵Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

The Certainty of God's Witness

⁶This is He who came by water and blood—Jesus Christ; not only by water, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. ⁷For there are three that bear witness in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one. ⁸And there are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one. ⁹If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater; for this is the witness of God which He has testified of His Son. ¹⁰He who believes in the Son of God has the witness in himself; he who does not believe God has made Him a liar, because he has not believed the testimony that God has given of His Son. ¹¹And this is the testimony: that God has given us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. ¹²He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life. ¹³These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you

may know that you have eternal life, and that you may continue to believe in the name of the Son of God.

Confidence and Compassion in Prayer

¹⁴Now this is the confidence that we have in Him, that if we ask anything according to His will, He hears us. ¹⁵And if we know that He hears us, whatever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we have asked of Him.

¹⁶If anyone sees his brother sinning a sin which does not lead to death, he will ask, and He will give him life for those who commit sin not leading to death. There is sin leading to death. I do not say that he should pray about that.

Mark my words...

1 John 5:16—A deadly sin is the sin that leads unto death. Literally translated it says: “sin unto death.” I believe John is writing that we should pray for everyone who commits sin, but if a person is sinning either, let’s say being killed by someone because of the killer’s sin or their own, that person is dead. There is nothing that can be changed once a person dies. In the last hour, the antichrist spirit, the final war, will cause much death. Pray for all who remain alive, that they may find life, life through the Son—but those dead apart from Jesus Christ are dead in sin, to Hell.

¹⁷All unrighteousness is sin, and there is sin not leading to death.

1 John 5:17—All unrighteousness or wrongdoing is sin: meaning murder is wrongdoing and not right.

Knowing the True—Rejecting the False

¹⁸We know that whoever is born of God does not sin; but he who has been born of God keeps himself, and the wicked one does not touch him.

1 John 5:18—If you don’t shoot back, or even pick-up a weapon in defense of your life—God will protect you; and Satan, or the wicked one, the wicked person following Satan cannot, will not, harm you.

¹⁹We know that we are of God, and the whole world lies under the sway of the wicked one.

²⁰And we know that the Son of God has come and has given us an understanding, that we may know Him who is true; and we are in Him who is true, in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God and eternal life.

²¹Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

1 John 5:21—Be on guard against the Antichrist. Be on guard against a false god. Don't break the Commandment "...no other Gods before Me." There is no doubt why John was the disciple Jesus loved the most. This is why, John, in his love, understanding, belief and service to Jesus wrote this letter; and most meaningfully, why Jesus gave John the Revelation; John would know what Jesus wants.

TITLE: I AM GOD

LETTERS—A Letter from God—S-S-S-S [Salvation-Service-Sanctification-Suffering]



“DEAR CHILDREN:

**BELIEVE ON THE LORD JESUS CHRIST AND YOU SHALL BE SAVED.
THIS IS YOUR SALVATION.**

**IMMEDIATELY UPON YOUR SALVATION, YOU MUST SHARE THE
GOSPEL AND SERVE TO SAVE OTHERS. THUS BEGINS THE FIRST STEP
TO SERVING JESUS, OR YOUR SERVICE. TOO MANY CHRISTIANS LET
THEIR LIVES BEGIN AND END HERE, WITH SALVATION. AND FOR
CHURCHES AND IN CHURCH LIFE; THIS IS THE BEGINNING, NOT THE
END OF SALVATION.**

**SERVICE BEGINS WITH SELFLESSNESS; YOUR SERVICE TO YOUR LORD
TO SERVE EACH OTHER. FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS DEAD. YOUR
SALVATION IS, AT FIRST; MY GIFT TO YOU FOR YOU TO ACCEPT OR
DENY THROUGH MY SON JESUS. YOUR SERVICE TO ME, AND TO
ONE ANOTHER, BEGINS WITH YOUR CHOICE. I AM THERE TO
SUPPORT YOU. TO FOLLOW MY SON, YOU MUST LOVE AND SERVE
ME AND ONE ANOTHER. NOW YOUR SERVING HAS BEGUN THE
STEPS TO YOUR SANCTIFICATION.**

**YOUR SANCTIFICATION IS YOUR STEP TO BECOMING PERFECTED.
MY SON SAID: ‘BE PERFECT, THEREFORE, AS YOUR HEAVENLY
FATHER IS PERFECT.’ IN YOUR SANCTIFICATION, ALTHOUGH IT
SHALL ONLY END WHEN I RECEIVE YOU TO MYSELF IN ETERNITY; IT
IS A LIFETIME UNDERTAKING. AND AS A CHRISTIAN, YOU MUST BE
GUIDED BY ME OR CHOOSE TO FOLLOW ME; MOMENT-BY-
MOMENT, DAY-BY-DAY, STEP-BY-STEP. AND THIS SANCTIFICATION,
AS I DID WITH MY SON, MUST LEAD TO YOUR SUFFERING.**

**YOU ARE GOING TO SUFFER AS YOUR EARTHLY LIFE REACHES ITS
END. YOU WILL SUFFER AS YOUR LIFE PROGRESSES DAY-BY-DAY:
PHYSICAL PAIN, EMOTIONAL PAIN, THE DEATH OF PERSONS—**

THERE IS MUCH NATURAL SUFFERING THAT EXISTS IN THIS LIFE. HOWEVER, THIS IS THE SUFFERING THAT ENTERED THE WORLD WHEN SATAN WAS GIVEN RULERSHIP BY ME WHEN ADAM SINNED AND DISOBEYED...YET THIS IS NOT THE SUFFERING OF WHICH I SPEAK.

THE SUFFERING I SPEAK OF IS TWOFOLD AND IS SUPERNATURAL. FIRST: YOU MUST SUFFER AT THE HAND OF DOING GOOD OR GOODNESS. SACRIFICING YOURSELF IN ALL YOUR BEING, TO LOVE YOUR GOD AND YOUR NEIGHBOR, CALLS FOR SUFFERING. IF YOU ARE HUNGRY, AND SO TOO YOUR NEIGHBOR; YOU SHOULD GIVE YOUR FOOD TO HIM. YOU WILL THEN SUFFER WITH HUNGER FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS'S SAKE. IF YOU ARE CLOTHED IN WINTER AND YOUR NEIGHBOR IS NAKED; YOU MUST GIVE YOUR CLOTHING TO HIM. YOU WILL THEN SUFFER THE COLD. IF YOU ARE IN SHELTER AND THE RAIN FALLS, AND YOUR NEIGHBOR IS NOT DRY; YOU MUST SUFFER TO GIVE YOUR SHELTER TO HIM...WHATEVER THE CIRCUMSTANCE—THE GREATER GOOD INVOLVES YOUR WILLINGNESS TO SUFFER—FOR YOUR GOD IS GOOD.

SECONDLY, IF YOU ARE WILLING TO TRULY SUFFER FOR GOODNESS BY YOUR GOD, YOU CAN BE EXPECTED TO RECEIVE ADDED SUFFERING FROM SATAN AND AT THE HANDS OF EVIL. FOR SATAN IS THE ENEMY OF YOUR FATHER, AND WHEN YOU SUFFER FOR GOOD, SATAN IS ALL TOO DISPLEASED AND HIS ATTACKS WILL CERTAINLY BE FORTHCOMING. IT IS HIS VERY NATURE TO NOT SIT IDLY BY WHILE THE WORK OF AND FOR YOUR LORD IS BEING DONE. ALL-IN-ALL; REST ASSURED AND HAVE PEACE IN KNOWING THAT I TOO SUFFERED THE LOSS OF MY ONLY SON. I TOO, SUFFERED AND DIED FOR GOOD AND AT THE HANDS OF EVIL; WITH THE KNOWLEDGE THAT SUCH SUFFERING AND DEATH WAS, AND IS, FOR THE [FOR YOUR] GREATER GOOD AND GREATER LOVE—THE GREATEST GOOD AND LOVE I HAVE FOR YOU, MY CHILDREN.

YOUR LOVING FATHER,

I AM

...I AM GOD.”

TITLE: I AM GOD

LETTERS—Declaration of Independent Protection

Title this my: Declaration of Independent Protection

By example, I was charged a security fee by the FAA to protect me from “terrorist” attack. I’m not afraid and God protects me. Let it be known—please inform the Islamic people who are being attacked...

I do not pay taxes and in no way endorse, finance, or morally agree with those in the US “homeland” and/or Christians who seek to destroy your people and home. I forgive you [and them] just as I love all of you.

The Writer

A Follower of Christ and a Citizen in the City of Angels

TITLE: I AM GOD

LETTERS—Dear People of Islam, Judaism, Christianity, and all the world

Dear People of Islam, Judaism, Christianity, and all the world:

I am a Christian living in the United States. I am living in this land because God placed me here. Since September 11, of 2001, and now following the war with Iraq...I aim, with the infinite and eternal power of words, to seek God's protection on earth and His guidance to a holy, heavenly home. When the sin that leads to death and destruction takes place in the world or sets foot here again in the new Roman Empire of America; and Armageddon (the final world war) begins, I would like you to know I will never ever murder you. In war, I choose the death of the Disciples of Christ who never righteously attacked or defended earthly lives with a sword.

I know the fallen angel, the devil, is deceiving people and nations into killing one another. Just as I know, my God is willing to forgive your sins and murders. I, personally, would like to say; "I am sorry" my homeland is at war. Truth be told, the only "weapons" I will ever use against my neighbors are faith and the belief in the Gospel of love, prayer, and The Lord God, Jesus.

Peace,

Mark Anthony DiBello

A Christian in "The City of Angels," Los Angeles, California, USA, Earth

TITLE: I AM GOD

LETTERS—President Bush

President Bush:

I had a vision about you last night. You and I were overnight guests in a home. We were the only two awake at 2:00 am. Music was playing. I asked if it should be turned off. [Luke 22:51] You mentioned that there was a time and a place for music, but since it wasn't one of your "strong points" it should be turned off.

I believe the vision is symbolic of Joshua and the battle of Jericho. Perhaps, you will discern its meaning.

Lastly, the Holy Spirit has a word for you from Holy Scripture: [Luke 22:51].

LUKE 22:49-51 {NIV}

⁴⁹When Jesus' followers saw what was going to happen, they said, "Lord, should we strike with our swords?" ⁵⁰And one of them struck the servant of the high priest, cutting off his right ear.

⁵¹But Jesus answered, "No more of this!" And he touched the man's ear and healed him.

God bless you.

Jesus loves you and died for us.

The time is at hand...

May the peace that goes beyond all understanding...

Yours in Christ,

Mark Anthony DiBello

A Christian

TITLE: I AM GOD
LETTERS—Benny Hinn

December 31, 2000

Pastor Benny Hinn
Benny Hinn Ministries

Pastor Hinn,

This is Mark Anthony DiBello. I am grateful to have had the opportunity to personally speak with you after your taping Wednesday, December 27th. (And to think I was ready to shear off this Samson-like hair that you remarked on. As with each of our wild hairstyles, what a blessing to have you tease me). I appreciate your comedic, congenial, corporate and Christ-like nature. I love you Pastor, you remind me of my favorite person...Me.

Pastor Hinn, I'd like to chronicle the three years I have followed your ministry, before closing with a summary of the various of projects I spoke to you about.

Having been evicted from your crusades in the past, the road to my shaking your hand, and your embracing me, was a testimony to perseverance (praise Jesus) as it was providential.

[REDACTED]

In 1991, the renowned Fr. Ralph DiOrio, a Catholic priest from (ironically) the Worcester, Massachusetts area, invited me to the altar of his healing service and exorcised the 10-year demonic hold that alcohol and drug abuse had on me. At that time, I also felt a temporal release from my sexual sin and self-destruction.

Thank the Lord, that I have only had one or two sips of alcohol and a single attempt at drug use in the ten years since then. More meaningfully, I do not possess the uncontrollable urge to do such things. But much more importantly, I went almost seven years without physically demeaning my own body. However, only three years ago, after devoting my life's work to Jesus and my own ministry; the sexual problem that plagued me reappeared. In my vain attempts to alleviate this evil possession, I began to experience severe demonic withdrawals that result in convulsions and seizures as I fast, attempting to pray that spirit out. I referred to Matthew 12:43-45 for my explanation of how I was attacked and inhabited again.

Pastor Hinn, it was around that time that I began following your ministry. I have often heard you speak about demons and what it takes for a healing. And in the past many months, as my demonic convulsions began to manifest during your services, I have been faithfully hoping you would lay hands on me when you were under the anointing.

At the first miracle crusade I attended, I merely sat in my seat without the heart or strength to receive a healing. Immediately thereafter, I knew Satan won those battles and I could do nothing, known to man, to stop my sinful, adulterous activities as they intensified in the weeks following the service.

Subsequently, I attended three more crusades with virtually the same result. I have even ushered at the Long Beach, California (New Years Eve, 1999) crusade and attended your 25th anniversary dinner, all without a healing, anointing touch, or “incident.” It was many weeks after the dinner, that I was determined to make my way to the platform at the Tampa (2000) crusade. It was at that crusade, that I presented a letter to Cliff (the staff usher who profoundly thanked me for my previous ushering duties) noting my intent to approach the stage and be healed, has I have seen you heal other addicts.

As I fearfully stood in the procession leading to the platform, much to my disappointment and shock, I was blatantly lied to and roughly escorted from the facility and almost arrested. Bear in mind, I did not blame your security staff and I understand the need to protect you. I only wanted to be made well under the power of the anointing Jesus has placed on you.

Thereafter, guided by God, I attended the Phoenix (2000) crusade and was led, by the partners around me, to go forth when you made a healing altar call. Again, I stumbled meekly, in tears, with my arm quivering, toward the platform. Not a single usher asked me why I wanted to be healed or did I “feel anything.” So I innocently moved forth. This time, I was just feet away from the stage, and having you lay hands on me, when I found myself surrounded by security. In a moment, one of the personnel from the stage encroached on me and said, “come to the green room and Pastor will speak to you personally.” Led to believe this man, I let him escort me by my crooked arm. Instantly, he shoved me outside the curtain and told the Phoenix police to escort me from the auditorium. Again, I was in mortal disbelief. However, I truly believe such an outright lie, to a devoted child of God, could only be a deception of the devil. So, disappointed and hopeless, I retreated back to my sinful lifestyle.

In the weeks following, as I sat in the same, distant, utmost corner, seat in the audience at *“This is Your Day,”* I willingly approached the security people after the “uneventful,” tapings. I innocently asked why I was lied to and rejected. The head security person said I was “too aggressive” and the other men claimed they were just following instructions. At that time, Pastor Hinn, I was directed to contact Mr. Wilson, your event coordinator. I wholeheartedly believed this entire situation involved conflicting spiritual forces. Here is an excerpt from that letter (which did not receive a response):

“I was...in need of a healing. When God’s spirit lures me to share my story, have Pastor lay hands on me, and be free from my bondage--I must, with Jesus’ mighty power, work ‘aggressively’ to defeat the evil one. I can think of no other reason, on earth, why I should not receive the healing hand of the Lord... Please help me. Allow Jesus to work, with His miraculous power, through Pastor and save me...”

Finally, this past summer, at the Worcester Crusade, I was the cause for commotion as I was delivered from my demonic possession on the auditorium floor, just a few yards from the platform. As I have heard you say repeatedly, this is a “distracting,” albeit natural occurrence during a time of a Holy Spirit “move.” And while, Pastor Hinn, I am still under demonic oppression, thank God, I have been released from the destructive habit that once consumed me.

And so it was, just days ago, through God’s gift of faith, that I had the blessed pleasure of meeting (there, at the foot of your car) such a godly servant as yourself. And miraculously, having you personally pray for me and my projects lets me know: GOD IS IN CONTROL.

As for the future, I faithfully look forward to attending the Fort Lauderdale and Las Vegas crusades. I know there is more to do. I have been witness to the powerful, patient, and persistent promises of Jesus for a holy and wholehearted healing--one I can personally lay faith to, and be a witness thereof.

In conclusion, as for the Lord’s work, I appreciate your forwarding me to Mr. Steve Hill. I will eagerly send him the proposal on God’s plan for a national baptismal program.

I have also enclosed a videotape (RT. 10 min.) for the family member, whom you mentioned, with an interest in television game shows. I would be honored to help them appear. Perhaps, Pastor Hinn, although you don’t watch much TV you will view it as well. It is quite entertaining and enlightening.

I have also enclosed a promotional flyer of my book, as well as my biography detailing my show business background.

If I may, I would be pleased to serve your ministry in any way.

Also, everlastingly at it,
your partner and friend in Christ,

Mark Anthony DiBello
cc: Colleen Mason, Steve Hill

TITLE: I AM GOD

LETTERS—Academy Award[®] Non-Acceptance

May the peace, Spirit, love and truth of Jesus be with us at this moment in man's history.

First of all, I am sorry to my fellow man, for all the sins I have committed in the last 4-years...

God gave me an Academy Award[®]-winning movie about Jesus and these world events that would have won me the calling to be speaking on the world stage today. I was told to share God's Word to billions, but I have failed.

But rather than have Satan tempt me to destroy myself, and take my own life, I will start speaking and writing again.

I warn true Christians, not non-Christians or Anti-Christians, to hold fast to the truth that the people and leaders of the USA, the new Roman Empire, are breaking the Lord's Commandments and are now following Satan's deception in choosing mass-killing, acting in hatred, and going to war.

Jesus, I'm sorry.

Please keep your heart and mind set on Christ. If you die in the belief that Christ would attack anyone—you are dead wrong.

And do you want to try and explain to Jesus how we murdered His creation?

Scripture holds it that a new empire with ten heads will initiate Armageddon... Here's a prediction...The USA might well get nine allies, who only need to believe this evil spirit.

Repent now! The peace a "Jesus Christian" must seek can only be found in the next world.

This world is passing, prepare for eternity with Him.

God bless your Mind, Spirit, and Soul.

TITLE: I AM GOD

TEST—Fill In the Blank

†

**“I AM GOD...
AND THIS IS THE TEST OF A TRUE CHRISTIAN.”**

THE TEST OF A TRUE CHRISTIAN
FILL IN THE BLANK

QUESTION #1: I _____ Hitler, [Saddam Hussein, Charles Manson, or the most
“evil” person in the world, etc.]

ANSWER KEY: Did you answer— love?

FINAL MARK: Talk to John, the disciple Jesus loved most. Because John said: “He who does not
love—does not know God—for God is love.”

QUESTION #2: God _____ life.

ANSWER KEY: Did you answer— is...loves...made...created...

FINAL MARK: If God is life...then who are you to kill it?
If God loves life...then who are you kill it?
If God made life...then who are you kill it?
If God created life...then who are you kill it?

TITLE: I AM GOD

TEST—Multiple Choices

THE TEST OF A TRUE CHRISTIAN
MULTIPLE CHOICES

Abortion?

- A. Only in cases of rape or incest.
- B. Only if the mother's life is in danger.
- C. No, but I am for contraception.
- D. Always, any of the above, or all of the above.
- E. Other explanation for doing so.
- F. Never.

Death Penalty?

- A. Only against terrorists or atheists.
- B. Only in cases of murder.
- C. Only in certain circumstances.
- D. Always, any of the above, or all of the above.
- E. Other explanation for doing so.
- F. Never.

Physician-assisted Suicide?

- A. Only in the last days or final world war when Christian leaders declare that it is a form of self-sacrifice.
- B. Only if I, or a person, is declared terminally ill [*Keep in mind: We're all terminally ill. You could die in a day, a week, a year...no one knows.*].
- C. It's a personal choice.
- D. Always, any of the above, or all of the above.
- E. Other explanation for doing so.
- F. Never.

Suicide?

- A. Only if, as a Christian, killing myself will save another human life.
- B. Only if Jesus tells me to, or I will be a martyr for a Christian cause.
- C. Only if I am terminally ill or in extreme pain.
- D. Always, any of the above, or all of the above.
- E. Other explanation for doing so.
- F. Never.

I will kill an animal? ☐ Yes ☐ No

- A. If I was the last person on earth and that animal could keep me alive as my food; or if it attacked me and my self-defense would save my or someone else's life.
- B. Only if that animal's death will save me or another human being; or, for example, if animal research will help to save a human life. I will not kill an animal myself, but I won't stop others if that's what they believe.
- C. Only for food, or if it threatens my life or someone else's life.
- D. Always, any of the above, or all of the above.
- E. Other explanation for doing so.
- F. Never.

War [when attacking]?

- A. Only when it was in Old Testament days, or BC [before Christ]; or if it is against an evil person or nation.
- B. Only if it serves to spread Christianity.
- C. Only if it is declared by the government.
- D. Always, any of the above, or all of the above.
- E. Other explanation for doing so.
- F. Never.

War [when attacked, or in self-defense]?

- A. Only if it defends the life of myself, my family, or my country against an evil person or nation.
- B. Only if it defends my Christian beliefs.
- C. Only if it defends my, or my nation's freedoms, justices, and righteous ways.
- D. Always, any of the above, or all of the above.
- E. Other explanation for doing so.
- F. Never.

War vs. Nations [or a person, house, neighborhood, city, state, country, planet]?

- A. Only when it was in Old Testament days, or BC [before Christ]; or if it is against an evil person or nation.
- B. Only if it serves to spread Christianity.
- C. Only if it is declared by the government.
- D. Always, any of the above, or all of the above.
- E. Other explanation for doing so.
- F. Never.

War vs. Religion

- A. Only if it defends the life of myself, my family, or my country against an evil person or religion.
- B. Only if it defends my Christian beliefs.
- C. Only if it defends my, or my religion's freedoms, justices, and righteous ways.
- D. Always, any of the above, or all of the above.
- E. Other explanation for doing so.
- F. Never.

ANSWER KEY:

A=Antichrist

[Your spirit is “anti” or “against” Christ’s—all the while you appear to all and to yourself to be a “Christian”].

B=Born Again

[Your “Born Again” spirit is against Christ’s. God is a living God, not a killing or dead God].

C=Christian

[Your “Christian” spirit is not Christ’s Holy Spirit. You are a “false” or “counterfeit” Christian].

D=Devil

[You are of “your father” the devil, as Jesus said. The devil has been a murderer (and a deceiver) from the beginning].

E=Explanation of other reason for doing so

[The devil has an innumerable number of explanations and an untold number of lies to combat the one, singular truth. And well-meaning or otherwise; your truth is that you are like he, a murderer (and a liar)].

F=Follower

[You are a true Christian: a follower of Jesus Christ].

FINAL MARK: *The Commandment is simple: “Thou shalt not kill.”*

Jesus spoke 2 Great Commandments: “Love God”—“Love thy neighbor”

*He also said: **If you break one Commandment—you break them all.***

These questions all follow these Commandments: If you break one [or fail one question] you fail them all.

TITLE: I AM GOD

TEST—Bonus Question

THE TEST OF A TRUE CHRISTIAN
BONUS QUESTION:

A house is on fire...What is your first instinct? [What have you done in the past in a similar circumstance? What would you do today? What would God have you to do tomorrow]?

- A. Stand still in shock.
- B. Run for your life.
- C. Call for help.
- D. Nothing.
- E. Instantly run to the fire to see if you can help or save a life.

*ANSWER KEY: Hell is like a house on fire—and if you answered A, B, C, or D—
You had better run for your life!*

TITLE: I AM GOD

TEST—Final Question—True or False

THE TEST OF A TRUE CHRISTIAN—FINAL QUESTION:
TRUE OR FALSE

Question: Does Jesus love everybody?

Answer: ☐ True ☐ False

ANSWER KEY: Then who are you to kill anybody?

TITLE: I AM GOD

TEST—Final Marks

Matthew 7:13-14

¹³“Enter by the narrow gate; for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and there are many who go in by it. ¹⁴Because narrow is the gate and difficult is the way which leads to life, and there are few who find it.”

Final Marks...

The way is broad that leads to destruction. If Jesus said the way to Heaven is narrow... It stands to reason; the way to Heaven is the one against destruction. And, after all, isn't murder or killing simply destruction?

MATTHEW 7:21

I Never Knew You

²¹“Not everyone who says to Me, “Lord, Lord,’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven. ²²Many will say to Me in that day, “Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?” ²³And then I will declare to them, “I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!”

Final Mark...

Lawlessness is breaking the rules—following the rules means passing the test.



**“I AM GOD...
IF YOU FAIL, SEEK FORGIVENESS AND
FAITHFULLY FOLLOW CHRIST.”**

TITLE: I AM GOD
THE LAST CHAPTER

†

**“I AM GOD...
THIS WRITING IS A BIBLE COMPANION,
NOT A BIBLE ADDITION.”**

“I AM GOD. READ THIS BOOK.”

- I AM

Read what God has to say about Jesus Christ, the Holy Spirit and angels.

Writings include:

*I AM GOD — Autobiography • Numbers • 5 Facts about God • 7 Secrets to Scripture • 9-11
10 Tenets • 12-Steps of Christian Discipleship • 15-Points in War • Jesus Christ's Top 10 List
Top 10 Cool Things to Know or Do • Cases • Chapters and Verses • Letters • A Letter from God
Declaration of Independent Protection • President Bush • Benny Hinn • Test • The Last Chapter*

Chapters include:

*Addiction • Angels • Animals • Antichrist • Anti-Christians • Baptism • Born Again • Church
Confession • Creation • Death • Demons • Devil • Earth • End Times • Energy • Entertainment
Eternal Life • Evil • Forgiveness • Free-will and Freedom • Government • Healing • Health
Heaven • Homelessness • Judgment • Justice • Killing • Knowledge • Life • Love • Marriage
Martyrdom • Men • Money • Nations • Peace • Performance • Politics • Prayer • Preaching
Prophecy • The Rapture • Religions • Revival • Salvation • Science • Self-Destruction • Sex
Sin • Spirit Possession • Style • Suicide • Temptation • UFO's • War • Women • Words • Work*

Passages include:

*Angels Appearing as Animals?
“God, answer me: creation or evolution?”
The Great Ways to Die
Even Satan is not an Atheist
Why Does God Allow Evil?
The #1 Evil of All-Time
Why Do People Kill?
Serial Killers Drink Budweiser
My Love for You is Killing Me
You Cannot be a Christian Killer
Marriage is Meaningful and Meaningless*

*Experience an 80% Increase in Brain Power
To all the Armies of the World...
Extra Points and Perversions
The New Unholy Roman Empire
What Do You Think About God?
The Science of Miracles
Judas Syndrome
Sex—Sex—Sex
The Definition for “Suicide Mission”
UFO's or Angels?
God Questions the US War in Iraq*

Copyright © 2004 by The Writer. All Rights Reserved. ISBN: 0-9744664-2-5

I AM GOD